HOKKAIDO UNIVERSITY

| Title | On the non-vanishing of theta liftings of tempered representations of $\mathrm{U}(\mathrm{p}, \mathrm{q})$ |
| :---: | :---: |
| Author(s) | A tobe, Hiraku |
| Citation | A dvances in Mathematics, 363, 106984 https://doi.org/10.1016j.aim.2020.106984 |
| Issue Date | 2020-03-25 |
| Doc URL | http:/hdl. handle.net/2115/84508 |
| Rights | ©2020, Elsevier. Licensed under the Creative Commons A tribution-NonCommercial-NoDerivatives 4.0 International http://creativecommons.org /icenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/ |
| Rights(URL) | http://creativecommons.org/icenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/ |
| Type | article (author version) |
| File Information | Adv. math 363_106984.pdf |

Instructions for use

# ON THE NON-VANISHING OF THETA LIFTINGS OF TEMPERED REPRESENTATIONS OF $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ 

HIRAKU ATOBE


#### Abstract

In this paper, we give an explicit determination of the non-vanishing of the theta liftings of tempered representations for unitary dual pairs $(\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}(r, s))$ for arbitrary non-negative integers $p, q, r, s$. For discrete series representations, in terms of Harish-Chandra parameters, we give a complete criterion when the theta lifts are nonzero. For tempered representations, we determine the non-vanishing in terms of the local Langlands correspondence assuming the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture.


## Contents

1. Introduction ..... 1
2. Classifications of irreducible representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ ..... 13
3. Theta liftings ..... 17
4. The definition and the main result ..... 25
5. Proof of Theorem 4.2 ..... 29
Appendix A. Explicit local Langlands correspondence for discrete series representations ..... 40
References ..... 48

## 1. Introduction

The theta lifting is an important tool in automorphic, real, and $p$-adic representation theories. In $\S 1.1$, we explain a global motivation of this paper. The local archimedean introduction is in $\S 1.2$. In $\S 1.5$, we recall the non-archimedean result in $[A G]$. Finally, in $\S 1.6$, we compare the proof of the archimedean result with the non-archimedean result. If a reader were not familiar with the automorphic or $p$-adic representation theory, he or she could see only $\S 1.2-1.4$.
1.1. Global motivation. In the theory of modular forms and automorphic representations, one of the most important problem is to construct (non-trivial) cusp forms or cuspidal representations.

Let $k$ be a number field. We denote by $\mathbb{A}_{k}$ the adele ring of $k$. Let $G$ and $H$ be connected reductive groups over $k$. In this subsection, for an irreducible cuspidal automorphic representation $\pi$ of $G\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$, we shall call $\Pi$ a "lift" of $\pi$ to $H\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$ if $\Pi$ is an automorphic representation (or "packet") of $H\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$ such that an arithmetic property (e.g., an $L$-function) of $\Pi$ is given explicitly by the one of $\pi$. There is a general problem.

Problem 1.1. Let $\pi \mapsto \Pi$ be a "lift" from automorphic representations of $G\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$ to the ones of $H\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$.
(1) Determine when $\Pi$ is nonzero.
(2) Determine when $\Pi$ is irreducible and cuspidal.
(3) Determine the local components $\Pi_{v}$ of $\Pi$ for each place $v$ of $k$.

Now we consider this problem for global theta liftings, which contain many classical liftings, e.g., the Shimura correspondence and the Saito-Kurokawa lifting.

In this paper, we only consider theta liftings for unitary dual pairs. Let $K / k$ be a quadratic extension of number fields and $\mathbb{A}_{K}$ be the adele ring of $K$. We denote by $W_{n}$ an $n$-dimensional hermitian space over $K$. Also, we fix an anisotropic skew-hermitian space $V_{0}$ over $K$ of dimension $m_{0}$, and denote by $V_{l}$ the $m$ dimensional skew-hermitian space obtained from $V_{0}$ by addition of $l$ hyperbolic planes, where $m=m_{0}+2 l$.

Let $G=\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)$ and $H=\mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)$ be the isometry groups of $W_{n}$ and $V_{l}$, respectively. Then $\mathbb{W}=W_{n} \otimes_{K} V_{l}$ can be regarded as a $2 m n$-dimensional symplectic space over $k$, and there exists a canonical map

$$
\alpha_{V, W}: \mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right) \times \mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right) \rightarrow \operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)
$$

Let $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})_{\mathbb{A}}$ be the metaplectic cover of $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$. Take a complete polarization $\mathbb{W}=\mathbb{X}+\mathbb{Y}$. Fixing a non-trivial additive character $\psi$ of $\mathbb{A}_{k} / k$, we obtain the Weil representation $\omega_{\psi}$ of $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})_{\mathbb{A}}$ associated to $\psi$ which is realized on the space $\mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{X}\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)\right)$ of Schwarts-Bruhat functions on $\mathbb{X}\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$. Let $\Theta: \mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{X}\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ be the functional $\phi \mapsto \Theta(\phi)=\sum_{x \in \mathbb{X}(k)} \phi(x)$. There exists a unique canonical splitting $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})(k) \rightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})_{\mathbb{A}}$ which satisfies that $\Theta\left(\omega_{\psi}(\gamma) \phi\right)=\Theta(\phi)$ for any $\gamma \in \operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})(k)$ and $\phi \in \mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{X}\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)\right)$.

Fix Hecke characters $\chi_{W}$ and $\chi_{V}$ of $\mathbb{A}_{K}^{\times} / K^{\times}$such that $\chi_{W} \mid \mathbb{A}_{k}^{\times}=\eta_{K / k}^{n}$ and $\chi_{V} \mid \mathbb{A}_{k}^{\times}=\eta_{K / k}^{m}$, where $\eta_{K / k}$ is the quadratic Hecke character of $\mathbb{A}_{k}^{\times} / k^{\times}$associated to $K / k$. Kudla gave an explicit splitting

$$
\widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}, \chi_{W}}: \mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right) \times \mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right) \rightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})_{\mathbb{A}} .
$$

Let $\omega_{\psi, V, W}=\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}, \chi_{W}}$ be the pullback of the Weil representation of $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})_{\mathbb{A}}$ to the product group $\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right) \times \mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$. For each $\phi \in \mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{X}\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)\right)$, we consider the theta function

$$
\Theta(g, h ; \phi)=\Theta\left(\omega_{\psi, V, W}(g, h) \phi\right)
$$

for $g \in \mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$ and $h \in \mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$, which is an automorphic function on $\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right) \times \mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$. If $\pi$ is an irreducible cuspidal representation of $\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$, the global theta lift $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ of $\pi$ to $\mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$ is the automorphic representation of $\mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)$ spanned by the functions

$$
\theta(h ; f, \phi)=\int_{\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)(k) \backslash \mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)} \Theta(g, h ; \phi) \overline{f(g)} d g,
$$

where $f \in \pi$ and $\phi \in \mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{X}\left(\mathbb{A}_{k}\right)\right)$, and $d g$ is the Tamagawa measure.
We may consider Problem 1.1 for $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$. The cuspidality issue can be solved by the so-called tower property.

Theorem 1.2 (Tower property $[\mathrm{R}])$. When $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is nonzero, $\theta_{\psi, V_{l+1}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is also nonzero. The theta lift $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is cuspidal if and only if $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi) \neq 0$ but $\theta_{\psi, V_{j}, W_{n}}(\pi)=0$ for all $j<l$.

The irreducibility and the local components are determined by Kudla-Rallis.
Theorem 1.3 ([KR, Corollary 7.1.3]). Assume that $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is nonzero and cuspidal. Then $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is irreducible and $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi) \cong \otimes_{v} \theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}\left(\pi_{v}\right)$, where $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}\left(\pi_{v}\right)$ is the "local theta lift" of the local component $\pi_{v}$ of $\pi$.

Therefore, the remaining issue is the non-vanishing problem. There is a local-global criterion for the nonvanishing of the global theta lifting $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ established by Yamana [Y] and Gan-Qiu-Takeda [GQT]. It is roughly stated as follows: When $\theta_{\psi, V_{j}, W_{n}}(\pi)=0$ for any $j<l$ so that $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is cuspidal (possibly zero),

- the global theta lifting $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is nonzero
"if" and only if
- the local theta lifting $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}\left(\pi_{v}\right)$ is nonzero for all places $v$ of $k$;
- the "standard $L$-function $L(s, \pi)$ " of $\pi$ is non-vanishing or has a pole at a distinguished point $s_{0}$.

Since a local archimedean property is not proven, the "if" part is not completely established. For more precisions, see [GQT, Theorem 1.3] and a remark after this theorem.

In any case, Problem 1.1 for the global theta lifting is reduced to a local analogous problem. The purpose of this paper is to give a criterion for the non-vanishing of local theta liftings of tempered representations.
1.2. Archimedean case. The theory of local theta correspondence was initiated by Roger Howe. Since then, it has been a major theme in the representation theory.

In this paper, we only consider the theta liftings for unitary dual pairs $(\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}(r, s))$. More precisely, let $W_{p, q}$ and $V_{r, s}$ be a hermitian space and a skew hermitian space over $\mathbb{C}$ of signature $(p, q)$ and $(r, s)$ and of dimension $n=p+q$ and $m=r+s$, respectively. Then $\mathbb{W}=W_{p, q} \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} V_{r, s}$ is a symplectic space over
$\mathbb{R}$ of dimension $2 m n$. The isometry group of $W_{p, q}$ (resp. $V_{r, s}$ ) is isomorphic to $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ (resp. $\mathrm{U}(r, s)$ ). Fix characters $\chi_{W}$ and $\chi_{V}$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$such that $\chi_{W} \mid \mathbb{R}^{\times}=\operatorname{sgn}^{n}$ and $\chi_{V} \mid \mathbb{R}^{\times}=\operatorname{sgn}^{m}$, and a non-trivial additive character $\psi$ of $\mathbb{R}$. Kudla [Ku2] gave an explicit splitting

$$
\widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}, \chi_{W}}: \mathrm{U}(p, q) \times \mathrm{U}(r, s) \rightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})
$$

of the natural map

$$
\alpha_{V, W}: \mathrm{U}(p, q) \times \mathrm{U}(r, s) \rightarrow \mathrm{Sp}(\mathbb{W})
$$

where $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$ is the metaplectic cover of $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$. We assume that $\chi_{W}$ and $\chi_{V}$ depend only on $n \bmod 2$ and $m \bmod 2$, respectively. Let $\omega_{\psi}$ be the Weil representation of $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$ associated to $\psi$, which is a smooth genuine representation. Then we obtain the Weil representation $\omega_{\psi, V, W}=\omega_{p, q, r, s}=\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}, \chi_{W}}$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q) \times$ $\mathrm{U}(r, s)$. For an irreducible (unitary) representation $\pi$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, the maximal $\pi$-isotypic quotient of $\omega_{\psi, V, W}$ has the form

$$
\pi \boxtimes \Theta_{r, s}(\pi)
$$

for some representation $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ of $\mathrm{U}(r, s)$ (known as the big theta lift of $\pi$ ). The most important result is the Howe duality correspondence stated as follows:

Theorem 1.4 (Howe duality correspondence [Ho, Theorem 2.1]). If $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ is nonzero, then it has a unique irreducible quotient $\theta_{r, s}(\pi)$.

We shall interpret $\theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ to be zero if so is $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$. We call $\theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ the small theta lift (or simply, the local theta lift) of $\pi$ to $\mathrm{U}(r, s)$. After the above theorem, it is natural to consider the following two basic problems:

Problem 1.5. (1) Determine precisely when $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ is nonzero.
(2) Determine $\theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ precisely if $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ is nonzero.

This problem is solved in the following cases:

- in the case where $q=0$, i.e., $\mathrm{U}(p, q)=\mathrm{U}(p, 0)$ is compact by Kashiwara-Vergne [KV] (see also [A, §6]);
- in the (almost) equal rank case by Paul [P1, P3];
- in special cases where $\pi$ is discrete series by J.-S. Li [Li] and Paul [P2];
- in the case where $\pi$ is one dimensional by Paul-Trapa [PT];

The theta correspondence for other reductive pairs was also considered by many persons. For example:

- He $[\mathrm{He} 1]$ considered the non-vanishing problem for the $\left(\mathrm{O}(p, q), \mathrm{Sp}_{2 n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$-case with $p+q \leq 2 n+1$.
- Adams-Barbasch treated the complex case in $[\mathrm{AB} 1]$ and the $\left(\mathrm{Mp}_{2 n}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{O}_{2 n+1}\right)$-case in [AB2];
- Paul [P4] considered the (almost) equal rank case for $\left(\mathrm{Sp}_{2 n}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{O}_{2 m}\right)$-case also;
- Li-Paul-Tan-Zhu [LPTZ] treated the $\left(\operatorname{Sp}(p, q), \mathrm{O}^{*}(2 n)\right)$-case;
- Moglin studied the relation between the theta correspondence and $A$-packets in [Mœ2], and constructed special unipotent $A$-packets in [Mœ3].
- Zhu [Z] studied generalized Whittaker models of theta liftings, and obtained some non-vanishing results.
To formulate an answer to Problem 1.5, it is necessary to have some sort of classifications of irreducible representations of the groups $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ and $\mathrm{U}(r, s)$. In this paper, we shall use the local Langlands correspondence (LLC) as a classification, and address Problem 1.5 (1) for tempered representations $\pi$.

The local Langlands correspondence for real reductive connected groups is well understood by the works of many mathematicians, including Adams, Arthur, Barbasch, Johnson, Langlands, Mœglin, Shelstad, and Vogan. For discrete series representations, it is essentially the same parametrization as using Harish-Chandra parameters (see Theorem 2.1 (4) below). In this introduction, we explain the main result (Theorem 4.2) only for discrete series representations in terms of their Harish-Chandra parameters.

Let $\pi$ be a discrete series representation of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. Its Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda=\mathrm{HC}(\pi)$ is of the form

$$
\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p} ; \lambda_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \lambda_{q}^{\prime}\right)
$$

where $\lambda_{i}, \lambda_{j}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}, \lambda_{1}>\cdots>\lambda_{p}, \lambda_{1}^{\prime}>\cdots>\lambda_{q}^{\prime}$, and $\left\{\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p}\right\} \cap\left\{\lambda_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \lambda_{q}^{\prime}\right\}=\emptyset$. To state our main result, we define some terminologies.

Definition 1.6 (Definition 4.1). Fix $\kappa \in\{1,2\}$ and suppose that $\chi_{V}$ is of the form

$$
\chi_{V}\left(a e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta}\right)=e^{\nu \sqrt{-1} \theta}
$$

for $a>0$ and $\theta \in \mathbb{R} / 2 \pi \mathbb{Z}$ with $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\nu \equiv n+\kappa \bmod 2$. Let $\pi$ be a discrete series representation of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p} ; \lambda_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \lambda_{q}^{\prime}\right)$.
(1) Write

$$
\lambda-\left(\frac{\nu}{2}, \ldots, \frac{\nu}{2}\right)=(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{x}, \underbrace{\frac{k-1}{2}, \frac{k-3}{2}, \ldots, \frac{-k+1}{2}}_{k}, b_{1}, \ldots b_{y} ; c_{1}, \ldots, c_{z}, d_{1}, \ldots, d_{w})
$$

or

$$
\lambda-\left(\frac{\nu}{2}, \ldots, \frac{\nu}{2}\right)=(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{x}, b_{1}, \ldots b_{y} ; c_{1}, \ldots, c_{z}, \underbrace{\frac{k-1}{2}, \frac{k-3}{2}, \ldots, \frac{-k+1}{2}}_{k}, d_{1}, \ldots, d_{w})
$$

with $a_{x},-b_{1}, c_{z},-d_{1} \geq \frac{k+1}{2}$. We set $k_{\lambda}$ to be the maximal choice of $k$ unless $\lambda_{i}-\nu / 2, \lambda_{j}^{\prime}-\nu / 2 \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$ for all $i, j$ (i.e., $k=0$ and $a_{i}, b_{i}, c_{i}, d_{i} \in \mathbb{Z} \backslash\{0\}$ for all $i$ ), in which case, we set $k_{\lambda}=-1$. Note that

$$
2 a_{i} \equiv 2 b_{i} \equiv 2 c_{i} \equiv 2 d_{i} \equiv k_{\lambda}-1 \bmod 2
$$

(2) When $k$ is chosen to be maximal in (1) (so that $k=0$ if $k_{\lambda} \in\{-1,0\}$ ), we put $r_{\lambda}=x+w$ and $s_{\lambda}=y+z$.
(3) Define $X_{\lambda} \subset \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z} \times\{ \pm 1\}$ by

$$
X_{\lambda}=\left\{\left(\lambda_{1}-\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right), \ldots,\left(\lambda_{p}-\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right)\right\} \cup\left\{\left(\lambda_{1}^{\prime}-\frac{\nu}{2},-1\right), \ldots,\left(\lambda_{q}^{\prime}-\frac{\nu}{2},-1\right)\right\}
$$

(4) We define a sequence $X_{\lambda}=X_{\lambda}^{(0)} \supset X_{\lambda}^{(1)} \supset \cdots \supset X_{\lambda}^{(n)} \supset \cdots$ as follows: Let $\left\{\beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{u_{j}}\right\}$ be the image of $X_{\lambda}^{(j)}$ under the projection $\frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z} \times\{ \pm 1\} \rightarrow \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\beta_{1}>\cdots>\beta_{u_{j}}$. Set $S$ to be the set of $i \in\left\{2, \ldots, u_{j}\right\}$ such that one of the following holds:

- $\beta_{i-1} \in\left\{a_{1}, \ldots, a_{x}\right\}$ and $\beta_{i} \in\left\{c_{1}, \ldots, c_{z}\right\}$;
- $\beta_{i-1} \in\left\{b_{1}, \ldots, b_{y}\right\}$ and $\beta_{i} \in\left\{d_{1}, \ldots, d_{w}\right\}$.

Here, we assume that $k$ is chosen to be maximal in (1) (so that $k=0$ if $k_{\lambda}=\{-1,0\}$ ). Then we define a subset $X_{\lambda}^{(j+1)}$ of $X_{\lambda}^{(j)}$ by

$$
X_{\lambda}^{(j+1)}=X_{\lambda}^{(j)} \backslash\left(\bigcup_{i \in S}\left\{\left(\beta_{i-1},+1\right),\left(\beta_{i},-1\right)\right\}\right)
$$

Finally, we set $X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=X_{\lambda}^{(n)}=X_{\lambda}^{(n+1)}$.
(5) For an integer $T$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, we define $a \operatorname{set} \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$ by

$$
\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)=\left\{(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)} \left\lvert\, 0 \leq \epsilon \alpha+\frac{k_{\lambda}-1}{2}<T\right.\right\}
$$

In particular, if $T \leq 0$, then $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)=\emptyset$.
The main result for discrete series representations is stated as follows:
Theorem 1.7 (Theorem 4.2). Let $\pi$ be a discrete series representation of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda$. Set $r=r_{\lambda}$ and $s=s_{\lambda}$.
(1) Suppose that $k_{\lambda}=-1$. Then for integers $l$ and $t \geq 0$, the theta lift $\Theta_{r+2 t+l+1, s+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if

$$
l \geq 0 \quad \text { and } \quad \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l \quad \text { for each } \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}
$$

(2) Suppose that $k_{\lambda} \geq 0$. Then for integers $l$ and $t \geq 1$, the theta lift $\Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if

$$
l \geq k_{\lambda} \quad \text { and } \quad \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l \quad \text { for each } \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}
$$

Moreover, for an integer $l$, the theta lift $\Theta_{r+l, s+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if $l \geq 0$.
For the proof, we use the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2 below). This conjecture gives a conjectural answer to restriction problems in terms of the local Langlands correspondence. For more precisions, see $\S 2.3$ below. To prove our main result for discrete series representations (Theorem 1.7), we use the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture only for discrete series representations. This case has been established by $\mathrm{He}[\mathrm{He} 2]$ (in terms of Harish-Chandra parameters), so that the statement in Theorem 1.7 holds unconditionally. For tempered representations, only a weaker version of the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture is proven by Beuzart-Plessis [BP].

When $\chi_{V}$ is of the form $\chi_{V}\left(a e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta}\right)=e^{\nu \sqrt{-1} \theta}$ for $a>0$ and $\theta \in \mathbb{R} / 2 \pi \mathbb{Z}$ with $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\nu \equiv m \bmod 2$, it is known that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$ if and only if $\Theta_{s, r}\left(\pi^{\vee} \otimes \operatorname{det}^{\nu}\right) \neq 0$ (see Proposition 3.9 below). By this property together with our main result, we can determine the non-vanishing of all theta lifts of tempered representations (including the case where $t<0$ ).
1.3. Idea of the proof. To study local theta correspondence, it is useful to consider "Howe's $K$-type of lowest degree". For the relation between this notion and Vogan's minimal $K$-type, see e.g., [P1, Lemma 1.4.5] and [Mœ1, $\S I I]$. In this paper, we use not these $K$-types (nor Blattner parameters) but $L$-parameters (Harish-Chandra parameters) and the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture.

The proof of the main theorem consists of three steps: First, we show the sufficient condition for the non-vanishing of theta lifts when $t \geq 1$. This is proven by induction by using the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture and seesaw identities ( $\oint 5.2$ ). The initial steps of the induction are the (almost) equal rank cases, which are established by Paul ([P1, P3]). Next, we show the necessary condition for the non-vanishing of theta lifts when $t \geq 1$. This is proven by using a non-vanishing result of theta lifts of one dimensional representations and seesaw identities (§5.3). Finally, by using the conservation relation (Theorem 3.7 below), we obtain the $t=0$ case.

In this subsection, we explain the more detailed idea in the first two steps through a low rank case. For simplicity, we assume that $\chi_{V}$ is trivial, i.e., $\nu=0$. Let us consider an irreducible discrete series representation $\pi$ of $\mathrm{U}(1,1)$ with Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda$ satisfying

$$
\lambda=(a ; c)
$$

with $a, c \in(1 / 2) \mathbb{Z} \backslash \mathbb{Z}$ and $a, c>0$, and determine when the theta lift $\Theta_{3,1}(\pi)$ is nonzero. We note that

- $k_{\lambda}=0, r_{\lambda}=s_{\lambda}=1 ;$
- $X_{\lambda}=\{(a,+1),(c,-1)\}$;
- $X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=X_{\lambda}$ if $a<c$, and $X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=\emptyset$ if $a>c$;
- $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)=1$ if $a<c, \epsilon=+1$ and $T>a-1 / 2$, and $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)=0$ otherwise.

In particular, $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(1) \leq 0$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$ if and only if $a \neq 1 / 2$. Now we prove that $\Theta_{3,1}(\pi) \neq 0$ if and only if $a \neq 1 / 2$.

The first step is to show one direction $a \neq 1 / 2 \Longrightarrow \Theta_{3,1}(\pi) \neq 0$ (see $\S 5.2$ ). To do this, we will look for an irreducible representation $\pi^{\prime}$ of $\mathrm{U}(2,1)$ such that

- $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$; and
- $\Theta_{3,1}\left(\pi^{\prime}\right) \neq 0$.

If we were able to find such $\pi^{\prime}$, setting $\sigma^{\prime}=\theta_{3,1}\left(\pi^{\prime}\right) \in \operatorname{Irr}(\mathrm{U}(3,1))$, we would have

$$
0 \neq \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \subset \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}\left(\Theta_{2,1}\left(\sigma^{\prime}\right), \pi\right) \cong \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(3,1)}\left(\Theta_{3,1}(\pi) \otimes \omega_{1,0,3,1}, \sigma^{\prime}\right)
$$

by a seesaw identity (Proposition $3.11(1))$. In particular, we could obtain $\Theta_{3,1}(\pi) \neq 0$.

Following §5.1, choose integers $\alpha_{1}>\alpha_{2}>\alpha_{3}=\alpha>\max \{a, c\}+1$. Let $\pi^{\prime}$ be the irreducible discrete series representation of $\mathrm{U}(2,1)$ with Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda^{\prime}$ satisfying

$$
\lambda^{\prime}= \begin{cases}\left(\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{3} ; \alpha_{2}\right) & \text { if } a=c+1 \\ \left(\alpha, a-\frac{1}{2} ; c+\frac{1}{2}\right) & \text { if } a \neq c+1\end{cases}
$$

Then using the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (proven in $[\mathrm{He} 2]$ ), we have $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$. Moreover, since $a>1 / 2$, by Paul's result [P3], the theta lift $\Theta_{3,1}\left(\pi^{\prime}\right)$ is nonzero. (In general, we will use the induction hypothesis here to obtain $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\pi^{\prime}\right) \neq 0$.) Therefore, we can deduce that $\Theta_{3,1}(\pi) \neq 0$.

The second step is to show the other direction $a=1 / 2 \Longrightarrow \Theta_{3,1}(\pi)=0$ (see $\S 5.3$ ). The idea is the same as [P2, Theorem 3.14]. Consider the twist $\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}^{-1}$. This is a discrete series representation with Harish-Chandra parameter

$$
(a-1 ; c-1)=\left(-\frac{1}{2} ; c-1\right)
$$

By Paul's result [P1], we have $\Theta_{0,2}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}^{-1}\right) \neq 0$ so that $\Theta_{2,0}\left(\pi^{\vee} \otimes \operatorname{det}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}\right) \neq 0$. Suppose for the sake of contradiction that $\Theta_{3,1}(\pi) \neq 0$. Then a seesaw identity (Proposition $\left.3.11(2)\right)$ implies that $\Theta_{5,1}\left(\operatorname{det}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}\right) \neq 0$. The theta liftings of one dimensional representations are well-understood (see Proposition 3.10), and it is known that $\Theta_{5,1}\left(\operatorname{det}_{\mathrm{U}(1,1)}\right)=0$. This gives a contradiction so that $\Theta_{3,1}(\pi)$ must be zero.
1.4. Examples. We shall give some examples of the main theorem. First, we consider the case where $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ is compact, i.e., $p=0$ or $q=0$.

Example 1.8 (Compact case). Suppose that $p=n$ and $q=0$. Let $\pi$ be an irreducible (continuous, discrete series) representation of $\mathrm{U}(n)=\mathrm{U}(n, 0)$ with Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda$ satisfying

$$
\lambda-\left(\frac{\nu}{2}, \ldots, \frac{\nu}{2}\right)=(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{x}, \underbrace{\frac{k-1}{2}, \frac{k-3}{2}, \ldots, \frac{-k+1}{2}}_{k}, b_{1}, \ldots b_{y})
$$

where $k=\max \left\{0, k_{\lambda}\right\}, a_{x},-b_{1} \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2, x+y+k=n$, and $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\chi_{V}\left(a e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta}\right)=e^{\nu \sqrt{-1} \theta}$ for $a>0$ and $\theta \in \mathbb{R} / 2 \pi \mathbb{Z}$. Note that $r_{\lambda}=x$ and $s_{\lambda}=y$. Then

$$
X_{\lambda}=X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=\left\{\left(a_{1},+1\right), \ldots,\left(a_{x},+1\right),\left(\frac{k-1}{2},+1\right), \ldots,\left(\frac{-k+1}{2},+1\right),\left(b_{1},+1\right), \ldots\left(b_{y},+1\right)\right\}
$$

Hence $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{-}(T)=\emptyset$ for any $T$. Moreover, for $t \geq 1$ and $l \geq k$, we see that $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(t+l) \leq l$ if and only if $l-k \geq x$, or $l-k<x$ and

$$
a_{x-l+k} \geq t+l-\frac{k_{\lambda}-1}{2}
$$

Similarly, $\pi^{\vee} \otimes \operatorname{det}^{\nu}$ has the Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda^{\vee}$ satisfying

$$
\lambda^{\vee}-\left(\frac{\nu}{2}, \ldots, \frac{\nu}{2}\right)=(-b_{y}, \ldots,-b_{1}, \underbrace{\frac{k-1}{2}, \frac{k-3}{2}, \ldots, \frac{-k+1}{2}}_{k},-a_{x}, \cdots-a_{1})
$$

Hence $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\vee}}^{-}(T)=\emptyset$ for any $T$. Moreover, for $t \geq 1$ and $l \geq k$, we see that $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(t+l) \leq l$ if and only if $l-k \geq y$, or $l-k<y$ and

$$
b_{1+l-k} \leq-\left(t+l-\frac{k_{\lambda}-1}{2}\right)
$$

Therefore, by Theorem 1.7, $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if one of the following holds:

- $|(r-s)-(x-y)| \leq 1$, and $r \geq x$ and $s \geq y$;
- $(r-s)-(x-y)>1$, and $s \geq n-x$, and if $n-x \leq s \leq n-1$, then

$$
a_{n-s} \geq \frac{m-n+1}{2}
$$

- $(r-s)-(x-y)<-1$, and $r \geq n-y$, and if $n-y \leq r \leq n$, then

$$
b_{1+y+r-n} \leq-\frac{m-n+1}{2} .
$$

Here, we put $m=r+s$. By using Blattner's formula, it is easy to check that this condition is compatible with results in $[\mathrm{KV}]$ and [A, Proposition 6.6], which are stated in terms of the highest weight.

Second, we consider the case where $\pi$ is holomorphic discrete series.

Example 1.9 (Holomorphic case). Suppose that $p=q$ so that $n=2 p$. Let $k \geq n$ be an even integer. Consider the holomorphic discrete series representation $\pi$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, p)$ of weight $k$. Its Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda$ is given by

$$
\lambda=\left(\frac{k-1}{2}, \frac{k-3}{2}, \ldots, \frac{k-n+1}{2} ; \frac{-k+n-1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{-k+3}{2}, \frac{-k+1}{2}\right) .
$$

For simplicity, we assume that $\chi_{V}$ is trivial, i.e., $\nu=0$. Then we have $k_{\lambda}=0, r_{\lambda}=n, s_{\lambda}=0$ and

$$
X_{\lambda}=X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=\left\{\left(\frac{k-1}{2},+1\right), \ldots,\left(\frac{k-n+1}{2},+1\right),\left(\frac{-k+n-1}{2},-1\right), \ldots,\left(\frac{-k+1}{2},-1\right)\right\}
$$

Hence for integer $T$, we have

$$
\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(T)=\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{-}(T)= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } T \leq \frac{k-n}{2} \\ T-\frac{k-n}{2} & \text { if } \frac{k-n}{2} \leq T \leq \frac{k}{2} \\ p & \text { if } T \geq \frac{k}{2}\end{cases}
$$

On the other hand, the Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda^{\vee}$ of $\pi^{\vee}$ is given by

$$
\lambda^{\vee}=\left(\frac{-k+n-1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{-k+3}{2}, \frac{-k+1}{2} ; \frac{k-1}{2}, \frac{k-3}{2}, \ldots, \frac{k-n+1}{2}\right)
$$

so that $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\vee}}^{\epsilon}(T)=\emptyset$ for any $T \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$. Therefore, by Theorem $1.7, \Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$ with $r+s \equiv 0 \bmod 2$ if and only if one of the following holds:

- $r-s \leq n$ and $r \geq n$;
- $n \leq r-s \leq k$ and $s \geq 0$;
- $r-s>k$ and $s \geq p$.

The following summarizes when $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$ with $n=2 p=4$ and $k=8$. Here, a black plot $(r, s)$ means that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$, and a white plot $(r, s)$ means that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)=0$.


Third, we consider the case where $\pi$ is generic (large) discrete series.
Example 1.10 (Generic case). Suppose that $p=q+1$ so that $n=2 p-1$. Consider a generic (large) discrete series representation $\pi$. Its Harish-Chandra parameter

$$
\lambda=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{p} ; b_{1}, \ldots, b_{q}\right)
$$

satisfies that

$$
a_{1}>b_{1}>a_{2}>b_{2}>\cdots>a_{q}>b_{q}>a_{p} .
$$

Hence

$$
X_{\lambda}=\left\{\left(a_{1}-\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right),\left(b_{1}-\frac{\nu}{2},-1\right), \ldots,\left(a_{q}-\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right),\left(b_{q}-\frac{\nu}{2},-1\right),\left(a_{p}-\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right)\right\} .
$$

In particular, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& k_{\lambda}= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } \nu \in\left\{2 a_{1}, \ldots, 2 a_{p}\right\} \cup\left\{2 b_{1}, \ldots, 2 b_{q}\right\}, \\
0 & \text { if } \nu \not \equiv 2 a_{i} \equiv 2 b_{j} \bmod 2, \\
-1 & \text { otherwise, }\end{cases} \\
& r_{\lambda}=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, p\} \mid 2 a_{p}>\nu\right\}+\#\left\{j \in\{1, \ldots, q\} \mid 2 b_{j}<\nu\right\}, \\
& s_{\lambda}=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, p\} \mid 2 a_{p}<\nu\right\}+\#\left\{j \in\{1, \ldots, q\} \mid 2 b_{j}>\nu\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now we further assume that $\nu=2 a_{i_{0}}$ for some $1 \leq i_{0} \leq p$. Then $k_{\lambda}=1, r_{\lambda}=s_{\lambda}=q$, and

$$
X_{\lambda}^{(1)}=X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)} \subset\left\{(0,+1),\left(b_{i_{0}}-\frac{\nu}{2},-1\right),\left(a_{p}-\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right)\right\},
$$

which is equal if $i_{0}<p$. Hence $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq 1$ for any $T \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$. Similarly, the Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda^{\vee}$ of $\pi^{\vee} \otimes \operatorname{det}^{\nu}$ satisfies that

$$
\begin{aligned}
X_{\lambda \vee} & =\left\{\left(-a_{p}+\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right),\left(-b_{q}+\frac{\nu}{2},-1\right),\left(-a_{q}+\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right) \ldots,\left(-b_{1}+\frac{\nu}{2},-1\right),\left(-a_{1}+\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right)\right\}, \\
X_{\lambda \vee}^{(\infty)} & \subset\left\{(0,+1),\left(-b_{i_{0}-1}+\frac{\nu}{2},-1\right),\left(-a_{1}+\frac{\nu}{2},+1\right)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The last inclusion is equal if $i_{0}>1$. Hence $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\vee}}(T) \leq 1$ for any $T \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$. Therefore, by Theorem 1.7, $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$ with $r+s \equiv p+q+1 \bmod 2$ if and only if $(r, s)=(q, q)$ or $\min \{r-q, s-q\} \geq 1$. The following summarizes when $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$. Here, a black plot $(r, s)$ means that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$, and a white plot $(r, s)$ means that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)=0$.


Finally, we give a more specific example.
Example 1.11. Suppose that $\chi_{V}$ is trivial, i.e., $\nu=0$. Let $\pi$ be an irreducible discrete series representation of $\mathrm{U}(4,5)$ with Harish-Chandra parameter

$$
\lambda=(6,5,4,-8 ; 3,1,0,-3,-7) .
$$

Then $k_{\lambda}=1, r_{\lambda}=5, s_{\lambda}=3$, and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& X_{\lambda}=\{(6,+1),(5,+1),(4,+1),(3,-1),(1,-1),(0,-1),(-3,-1),(-7,-1),(-8,+1)\} \\
& X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=\{(6,+1), \\
&(0,-1),(-3,-1),(-7,-1),(-8,+1)\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence

$$
\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(T)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\emptyset & \text { if } T \leq 6, \\
\{(6,+1)\} & \text { if } T>6,
\end{array} \quad \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{-}(T)= \begin{cases}\{(0,-1)\} & \text { if } 0<T \leq 3 \\
\{(0,-1),(-3,-1)\} & \text { if } 3<T \leq 7 \\
\{(0,-1),(-3,-1),(-7,-1)\} & \text { if } T>7\end{cases}\right.
$$

Therefore, by Theorem 1.7, $\Theta_{5+2 t+l, 3+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if one of the following holds:

- $t=0$ and $l \geq 0$;
- $t \geq 1, l \geq 1$ and $t+1 \leq 3$;
- $t \geq 1, l \geq 2$ and $t+2 \leq 7$;
- $t \geq 1$ and $l \geq 3$.

Similarly, the Harish-Chandra parameter of $\pi^{\vee}$ is given by

$$
\lambda^{\vee}=(8,-4,-5,-6 ; 7,3,0,-1,-3)
$$

We have $k_{\lambda \vee}=1, r_{\lambda^{\vee}}=3, s_{\lambda^{\vee}}=5$, and

$$
\begin{aligned}
X_{\lambda \vee} & =\{(8,+1),(7,-1),(3,-1),(0,-1),(-1,-1),(-3,-1),(-4,+1),(-5,+1),(-6,+1)\} \\
X_{\lambda \vee}^{(\infty)} & =\{\quad(3,-1),(0,-1),(-1,-1),(-3,-1),(-4,+1),(-5,+1),(-6,+1)\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\vee}}^{+}(T)=\emptyset$ for any $T$, and

$$
\mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\vee}}^{-}(T)= \begin{cases}\{(0,-1)\} & \text { if } 0<T \leq 1, \\ \{(0,-1),(-1,-1)\} & \text { if } 1<T \leq 3, \\ \{(0,-1),(-1,-1),(-3,-1)\} & \text { if } T>3\end{cases}
$$

Therefore, by Theorem 1.7, $\Theta_{5+l, 3+2 t+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if one of the following holds:

- $t=0$ and $l \geq 0$;
- $t \geq 0, l \geq 1$ and $t+1 \leq 1$;
- $t \geq 0, l \geq 2$ and $t+2 \leq 3$;
- $t \geq 0$ and $l \geq 3$.

The following summarizes when $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$. Here, a black plot $(r, s)$ means that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$, and a white plot $(r, s)$ means that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)=0$.

1.5. Non-archimedean case. In this subsection, we recall a result in the non-archimedean case in [AG]. Let $E / F$ be a quadratic extension of non-archimedean local fields of characteristic zero. We denote by $W_{n}$ an $n$-dimensional hermitian space over $E$. Also, we fix an anisotropic skew-hermitian space $V_{0}$ over $E$ of dimension $m_{0}$, and denote by $V_{l}$ the $m$-dimensional skew-hermitian space obtained from $V_{0}$ by addition of $l$ hyperbolic planes, where $m=m_{0}+2 l$. As in $\S 1.1$, fixing a non-trivial additive character $\psi$ of $F$ and characters $\chi_{W}$ and $\chi_{V}$ of $E^{\times}$such that $\chi_{W} \mid F^{\times}=\eta_{E / F}^{n}$ and $\chi_{V} \mid F^{\times}=\eta_{E / F}^{m}$, we obtain the Weil representation $\omega_{\psi, V, W}$ of $\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right) \times \mathrm{U}\left(V_{l}\right)$. Here, $\eta_{E / F}$ is the quadratic character of $F^{\times}$associated to $E / F$.

For an irreducible smooth representation $\pi$ of $\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)$, the big theta lift $\Theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is defined similarly as in $\S 1.2$. The Howe duality correspondence is proven by Waldspurger [W] when the residual characteristic of $F$ is not two, and by Gan-Takeda [GT1, GT2] in general. Hence we can define the small theta lift (or simply, the local theta lift) $\theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ of $\pi$ similarly as in $\S 1.2$, and we may consider Problem 1.5 in the non-archimedean case.

In [AG], we addressed both Problem 1.5 (1) and (2) in terms of the local Langlands correspondence established by Mok [Mo] and Kaletha-Mínguez-Shin-White [KMSW]. We recall only the result concerning Problem 1.5 (1).

The local Langlands correspondence classifies the irreducible tempered representations $\pi$ of $\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)$ by their $L$-parameters $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$, where

$$
\phi: W D_{E} \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})
$$

is a conjugate self-dual representation of the Weil-Deligne group $W D_{E}=W_{E} \times \mathrm{SL}_{2}(\mathbb{C})$ of $\operatorname{sign}(-1)^{n-1}$ with bounded image, and

$$
\eta \in \operatorname{Irr}\left(A_{\phi}\right)
$$

is an irreducible character of the component group $A_{\phi}$ associated to $\phi$, which is an elementary two abelian group. More precisely, if we decompose

$$
\phi=m_{1} \phi_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus m_{u} \phi_{u} \oplus\left(\phi^{\prime} \oplus^{c} \phi^{\wedge}\right)
$$

where

- $\phi_{i}$ is an irreducible conjugate self-dual representation of $\operatorname{sign}(-1)^{n-1}$;
- $m_{i}>0$ is the multiplicity of $\phi_{i}$ in $\phi$;
- $\phi^{\prime}$ is a sum of irreducible representations of $W D_{E}$ which are not conjugate self-dual of sign $(-1)^{n-1}$;
- ${ }^{c} \phi^{\wedge}$ is the conjugate dual of $\phi^{\prime}$,
then

$$
A_{\phi}=(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{\phi_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{\phi_{u}}
$$

Namely, $A_{\phi}$ is a free $(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z})$-module of rank $u$ equipped with a canonical basis $\left\{e_{\phi_{1}}, \ldots, e_{\phi_{u}}\right\}$ associated to $\left\{\phi_{1}, \ldots, \phi_{u}\right\}$. We call the element $z_{\phi}=m_{1} e_{\phi_{1}}+\cdots+m_{u} e_{\phi_{u}}$ in $A_{\phi}$ the central element of $A_{\phi}$.

The tower property (Proposition 3.6 below) also holds in the non-archimedean case. It asserts that if $\Theta_{\psi, V_{l}, W_{n}}(\pi)$ is nonzero, then so is $\Theta_{\psi, V_{l+1}, W_{n}}(\pi)$. Fix $\kappa \in\{1,2\}$ and $\delta \in E^{\times}$such that $\operatorname{tr}_{E / F}(\delta)=0$. There are exactly two anisotropic skew-hermitian spaces $V_{0}^{+}$and $V_{0}^{-}$such that $\operatorname{dim}\left(V_{0}^{ \pm}\right) \equiv n+\kappa \bmod 2$. For $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, when $V_{0}=V_{0}^{\epsilon}$, we also write $V_{l}=V_{l}^{\epsilon}$. This is characterized by

$$
\chi_{V}\left(\delta^{-m}(-1)^{(m-1) m / 2} \operatorname{det}\left(V_{l}\right)\right)=\epsilon .
$$

We call $\mathcal{V}_{\epsilon}=\left\{V_{l}^{\epsilon} \mid l \geq 0\right\}$ the $\epsilon$-Witt tower, and

$$
m_{\epsilon}(\pi)=\min \left\{\operatorname{dim}\left(V_{l}^{\epsilon}\right) \mid \Theta_{\psi, V_{l}^{\epsilon}, W_{n}}(\pi) \neq 0\right\}
$$

the first occurrence index of $\pi$ in the Witt tower $\mathcal{V}_{\epsilon}$.
The following theorem is one of the main results in [AG]. Here, we denote the unique $k$-dimensional irreducible representation of $\mathrm{SL}_{2}(\mathbb{C})$ by $S_{k}$.
Theorem 1.12 ([AG, Theorem 4.1]). Fix $\kappa \in\{1,2\}$ and $\delta \in E^{\times}$such that $\operatorname{tr}_{E / F}(\delta)=0$. Let $\pi$ be an irreducible tempered representation of $\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)$ with L-parameter $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$.
(1) Consider the set $\mathcal{T}$ containing $\kappa-2$ and all integers $k>0$ with $k \equiv \kappa \bmod 2$ satisfying the following conditions:
(chain condition): $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V} S_{\kappa}+\chi_{V} S_{\kappa+2}+\cdots+\chi_{V} S_{k}$;
(odd-ness condition): the multiplicity of $\chi_{V} S_{r}$ in $\phi$ is odd for $r=\kappa, \kappa+2, \ldots, k-2$;
(initial condition): if $\kappa=2$, then $\eta\left(e_{V, 2}\right)=-1$;
(alternating condition): $\eta\left(e_{V, r}\right)=-\eta\left(e_{V, r+2}\right)$ for $r=\kappa, \kappa+2, \ldots, k-2$.
Here, $e_{V, r}$ is the element in $A_{\phi}$ corresponding to $\chi_{V} S_{r}$. Let

$$
k_{\lambda}=\max \mathcal{T}
$$

Then

$$
\min \left\{m_{+}(\pi), m_{-}(\pi)\right\}=n-k_{\lambda} \quad \text { and } \quad \max \left\{m_{+}(\pi), m_{-}(\pi)\right\}=n+2+k_{\lambda} .
$$

(2) If $k_{\lambda}=-1$, then $m_{+}(\pi)=m_{-}(\pi)$. Suppose that $k_{\lambda} \geq 0$. Then $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V}$ if $\kappa=1$. Moreover, $\min \left\{m_{+}(\pi), m_{-}(\pi)\right\}=m_{\alpha}(\pi)$ if and only if

$$
\alpha= \begin{cases}\eta\left(z_{\phi}+e_{\chi_{V}}\right) & \text { if } \kappa=1 \\ \eta\left(z_{\phi}\right) \cdot \varepsilon\left(\phi \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}, \psi_{2}^{E}\right) & \text { if } \kappa=2\end{cases}
$$

where $\varepsilon\left(\phi \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}, \psi_{2}^{E}\right)=\varepsilon\left(1 / 2, \phi \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}, \psi_{2}^{E}\right)$ is the root number of $\phi \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with respect to the additive character $\psi_{2}^{E}$ of $E$ defined by $\psi_{2}^{E}(x)=\psi\left(\operatorname{tr}_{E / F}(\delta x)\right)$.

It seems that this theorem closely resembles our main result (Theorem 4.2 below).
1.6. Archimedean case v.s. non-archimedean case. In this subsection, we explain some differences between the archimedean case and the non-archimedean case.

First of all, one of clear differences is the parametrization of Witt towers. Fixing $\kappa \in\{1,2\}$, in the non-archimedean case, there exist exactly two Witt towers

$$
\mathcal{V}_{ \pm}=\left\{V_{l}^{ \pm} \mid l \geq 0, \operatorname{dim}\left(V_{l}^{ \pm}\right) \equiv n+\kappa \bmod 2\right\}
$$

whereas, in the archimedean case, for each integer $d$ with $d \equiv \kappa \bmod 2$, there is a Witt tower

$$
\mathcal{V}_{d}=\left\{V_{r, s} \mid r-s=d, r+s \equiv n+\kappa \bmod 2\right\}
$$

The first occurrence indices are defined similarly in $\S 1.5$ for each Witt towers. The conservation relation proven by Sun-Zhu [SZ2] asserts that $m_{+}(\pi)+m_{-}(\pi)=2 n+2$ for any irreducible smooth representation $\pi$ of $\mathrm{U}\left(W_{n}\right)$ in the non-archimedean case, whereas, it is more complicated in the archimedean case (see Theorem 3.7 below).

To study the theta correspondence, we often need to know a relation between theta lifts and induced representations. To show such a relation, in non-archimedean case, Kudla's filtration [Ku1] is useful. This is a finite explicit filtration of the Jacquet module of the Weil representation. Its archimedean analogue is the induction principle (see e.g., [P1, Theorem 4.5.5]). As a matter of fact, however, the induction principle is just an analogue of a corollary of Kudla's filtration, so that it is less useful than Kudla's filtration itself.

Both of the proofs of Theorem 1.12 and our main result (Theorem 4.2 below) use the local Gan-GrossPrasad conjecture (for tempered representations). In the non-archimedean case, Beuzart-Plessis proved it completely, whereas, in the archimedean case, he proved only a weaker version of it ([BP]). For discrete series representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, He [He2] proved the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture in terms of HarishChandra parameters.

Also, both of the proofs of two results (Theorem 1.12 and Theorem 4.2) use explicit descriptions of theta correspondence in the equal rank case and the almost equal rank case. In the archimedean case, they are Paul's results ([P1, P3]). In the non-archimedean case, they are two of Prasad's conjectures $([\operatorname{Pr}])$, both of which are proven by Gan-Ichino [GI].
1.7. Organization of this paper. This paper is organized as follows. In $\S 2$, we explain two parametrizations of irreducible representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, Harish-Chandra parameters and $L$-parameters, and we compare them. Also we state the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture. In $\S 3$, we recall some basic results of theta correspondence, including the Howe duality correspondence, the induction principle, seesaw identities, and Paul's results ([P1, P3]). For the unitary dual pairs, we use Kudla's splitting, whereas, Paul uses double covers of unitary groups. We also compare them in $\S 3$. In $\S 4$, we state the main result (Theorem 4.2) and its corollary (Corollary 4.5). Finally, we prove the main result in $\S 5$. The relation between Harish-Chandra parameters and $L$-parameters (Theorem 2.1 (4)) might be well-known, but there seems to be no proper reference. For the convenience of the reader, we explain this relation in Appendix A.

Acknowledgments. The author is grateful to Atsushi Ichino, Shunsuke Yamana, Yoshiki Oshima and Kohei Yahiro for useful discussions. We are most thankful to Hisayosi Matumoto for pointing out using Schmid's character identity to prove Proposition A.3. This is a key proposition to relate $L$-parameters with HarishChandra parameters. Thanks are also due to the referees for careful readings and helpful comments. This work was supported by the Foundation for Research Fellowships of Japan Society for the Promotion of Science for Young Scientists (DC1) Grant 26-1322.

Notation. The symmetric group on $n$ letters is denoted by $S_{n}$. For non-negative integers $p$ and $q$, we set $n=p+q$ and define the unitary group $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ of signature $(p, q)$ by

$$
\mathrm{U}(p, q)=\left\{g \in \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C}) \left\lvert\, \begin{array}{l|} 
\\
\\
\bar{g}
\end{array}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right) g=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right)\right.\right\} .
$$

We also denote by $\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ a unitary group of size $n$, i.e., $\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ is a $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ for some non-negative integers $p, q$ such that $n=p+q$.

For a reductive Lie group $G$, we denote by $\operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}(G)$ (resp. $\left.\operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(G)\right)$ the set of equivalence classes of discrete series representations (resp. tempered representations) of $G$.

Put $\mathbb{C}^{1}=\left\{z \in \mathbb{C}^{\times} \mid z \bar{z}=1\right\}$. For a symplectic space $\mathbb{W}$ over $\mathbb{R}$, we denote the $\mathbb{C}^{1}$-cover of $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$ by $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$, and the double cover of $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$ by $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$, which is a closed subgroup of $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$. Namely,


One should not confuse $\mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$ with $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$. When we consider representations of covering groups, we always assume that they are unitary and genuine.

We denote representations of Lie groups by $\pi$ and $\sigma$, and ones of covering groups by $\widetilde{\pi}$ and $\widetilde{\sigma}$. Also we denote the contragredient representations of $\pi, \sigma, \widetilde{\pi}$ and $\widetilde{\sigma}$ by $\pi^{\vee}, \sigma^{\vee}, \widetilde{\pi}^{\vee}$ and $\widetilde{\sigma}^{\vee}$, respectively. One should not confuse $\widetilde{\pi}$ with $\pi^{\vee}$.

## 2. Classifications of irreducible representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$

In this section, we give two parametrizations of irreducible representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, and we compare them. We also state the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture in $\S 2.3$.
2.1. Harish-Chandra parameters. The Harish-Chandra parameters classify irreducible discrete series representations. Let $G=\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. We set $K \cong \mathrm{U}(p) \times \mathrm{U}(q)$ to be the maximal compact subgroup of $G$ consisting of the usual block diagonal matrices, and $T$ to be the maximal compact torus of $G$ consisting of diagonal matrices. We denote the Lie algebras of $G, K$ and $T$ by $\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{k}$ and $\mathfrak{t}$, and its complexifications by $\mathfrak{g}_{\mathbb{C}}, \mathfrak{k}_{\mathbb{C}}$ and $\mathfrak{t}_{\mathbb{C}}$, respectively. The set $\Delta_{c}$ of compact roots of $\mathfrak{g}_{\mathbb{C}}$ with respect to $\mathfrak{t}_{\mathbb{C}}$ and the set $\Delta_{n}$ of non-compact roots are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta_{c} & =\left\{e_{i}-e_{j} \mid 1 \leq i, j \leq p\right\} \cup\left\{f_{i}-f_{j} \mid 1 \leq i, j \leq q\right\} \\
\Delta_{n} & =\left\{ \pm\left(e_{i}-f_{j}\right) \mid 1 \leq i \leq p, 1 \leq j \leq q\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

respectively. Here, $e_{i}, f_{j} \in \mathfrak{t}_{\mathbb{C}}^{*}$ are defined by

$$
e_{i}:\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
t_{1} & & \\
& \ddots & \\
& & t_{n}
\end{array}\right) \mapsto t_{i}, \quad f_{j}:\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
t_{1} & & \\
& \ddots & \\
& & t_{n}
\end{array}\right) \mapsto t_{p+j}
$$

Note that $e_{i}$ and $f_{j}$ belong to $\sqrt{-1} t^{*}$, i.e., the images $e_{i}(\mathfrak{t})$ and $f_{j}(\mathfrak{t})$ are in $\sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}$.
The Harish-Chandra parameter $\mathrm{HC}(\pi)$ of a discrete series representation $\pi$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ is of the form

$$
\mathrm{HC}(\pi)=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p} ; \lambda_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \lambda_{q}^{\prime}\right) \in \sqrt{-1} \mathrm{t}^{*}
$$

where

- $\lambda_{i}, \lambda_{j}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}$;
- $\lambda_{i} \neq \lambda_{j}^{\prime}$ for $1 \leq i \leq p$ and $1 \leq j \leq q$;
- $\lambda_{1}>\cdots>\lambda_{p}$ and $\lambda_{1}^{\prime}>\cdots>\lambda_{q}^{\prime}$.

Here, using the basis $\left\{e_{1}, \ldots, e_{p}, f_{1}, \ldots, f_{q}\right\}$, we identify $\sqrt{-1} t^{*}$ with $\mathbb{R}^{p} \times \mathbb{R}^{q}$. Via this identification, we regard $\mathrm{HC}(\pi)$ as an element of $\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{p} \times\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{q}$. Hence we obtain an injection

$$
\mathrm{HC}: \operatorname{Irr}_{\mathrm{disc}}(\mathrm{U}(p, q)) \hookrightarrow\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{p} \times\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{q}
$$

The infinitesimal character $\tau_{\lambda}$ of $\pi$ is the $W_{G}$-orbit of $\lambda=\mathrm{HC}(\pi)$, where $W_{G}$ is the Weyl group of $G$ relative to $T$. As well as $\lambda=\mathrm{HC}(\pi)$ is regarded as an element of $\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{p} \times\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{q}$, we regard $\tau_{\lambda}$ as an element of $\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{n} / S_{n}$. Note that given $\tau \in\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{n} / S_{n}$, there are exactly $n!/(p!q!)$ discrete series representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ whose infinitesimal characters are equal to $\tau$.
2.2. $L$-parameters. The local Langlands correspondence is a parametrization of irreducible tempered representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ in terms of $L$-parameters.

For $\alpha \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$, we define a unitary character $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$by

$$
\chi_{2 \alpha}(z)=\bar{z}^{-2 \alpha}(z \bar{z})^{\alpha}=(z / \bar{z})^{\alpha} .
$$

Note that $\chi_{2 \alpha}(\bar{z})=\chi_{2 \alpha}(z)^{-1}=\chi_{-2 \alpha}(z)$. When $a>0$ and $\theta \in \mathbb{R} / 2 \pi \mathbb{Z}$, we have

$$
\chi_{2 \alpha}\left(a e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta}\right)=e^{2 \alpha \sqrt{-1} \theta}
$$

Define $\Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ by

$$
\Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)=\left\{\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}} \left\lvert\, \alpha_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}\right., 2 \alpha_{i} \equiv n-1 \bmod 2, \alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{n}\right\}
$$

For $\phi=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}} \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, we define a component group $A_{\phi}$ of $\phi$ by

$$
A_{\phi}=(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{2 \alpha_{n}}
$$

Namely, $A_{\phi}$ is a free $(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z})$-module of rank $n$ equipped with a canonical basis $\left\{e_{2 \alpha_{1}}, \ldots, e_{2 \alpha_{n}}\right\}$ associated to $\left\{\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}, \ldots, \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}}\right\}$.

More generally, we define $\Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(U_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ by the set of representations $\phi$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$of the form

$$
\phi=\left(m_{1} \chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus m_{u} \chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}\right) \oplus\left(\xi_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \xi_{v}\right) \oplus\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1} \oplus \cdots \oplus{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right)
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ satisfies $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv n-1 \bmod 2$ and $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{u}$;
- $m_{i} \geq 1$ is the multiplicity of $\chi_{2 \alpha_{i}}$ in $\phi$;
- $m_{1}+\cdots+m_{u}+2 v=n$;
- $\xi_{i}$ is a unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$, which is not of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ with $2 \alpha \equiv n-1 \bmod 2$;
- ${ }^{c} \xi_{i}^{-1}$ is the unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$defined by ${ }^{c} \xi_{i}^{-1}(z)=\xi_{i}\left(\bar{z}^{-1}\right)$.

For such $\phi$, we define a component group $A_{\phi}$ of $\phi$ by

$$
A_{\phi}=(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{2 \alpha_{u}} .
$$

We denote the Pontryagin dual of $A_{\phi}$ by $\widehat{A_{\phi}}$. For $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$, define $-\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$ by $(-\eta)\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)=-\eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)$ for $i=1, \ldots, u$.

We define an additive character $\psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}$ of $\mathbb{C}$ by

$$
\psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}(z)=\exp (2 \pi(\bar{z}-z))
$$

for $z \in \mathbb{C}$. For a (continuous, completely reducible) representation $\phi$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$, let $\varepsilon\left(s, \phi, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)$ be the $\varepsilon$-factor of $\phi$ (see [T]). It satisfies that

- $\varepsilon\left(s, \phi_{1} \oplus \phi_{2}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)=\varepsilon\left(s, \phi_{1}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right) \cdot \varepsilon\left(s, \phi_{2}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right) ;$
- $\varepsilon\left(1 / 2, \xi \oplus^{c} \xi^{-1}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)=1$ for any character $\xi$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$;
- $\varepsilon\left(1 / 2, \chi_{2 \alpha}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)=1$ for $\alpha \in \mathbb{Z}$;
- When $\alpha \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z} \backslash \mathbb{Z}$,

$$
\varepsilon\left(\frac{1}{2}, \chi_{2 \alpha}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)= \begin{cases}-1 & \text { if } \alpha>0 \\ +1 & \text { if } \alpha<0\end{cases}
$$

For the last equation, see e.g., [GGP2, Proposition 2.1]. We call the central value $\varepsilon\left(1 / 2, \phi, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)$ the root number of $\phi$ with respect to $\psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}$, and we denote it simply by $\varepsilon\left(\phi, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)$.

The local Langlands correspondence is a parametrization of $\operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ as follows:
Theorem 2.1 ([L], [V3], [S1, S2, S3]). (1) There is a canonical surjection

$$
\bigsqcup_{p+q=n} \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q)) \rightarrow \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right) .
$$

For $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, we denote by $\Pi_{\phi}$ the inverse image of $\phi$ under this map, and call $\Pi_{\phi}$ the L-packet associated to $\phi$.
(2) There is a bijection

$$
J: \Pi_{\phi} \rightarrow \widehat{A_{\phi}}
$$

If $\pi \in \Pi_{\phi}$ corresponds to $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$ via this bijection, we write $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$ and call $(\phi, \eta)$ the $L$ parameter of $\pi$.
(3) If $\phi=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}} \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, the L-packet $\Pi_{\phi}$ consists of discrete series representations of various $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ whose infinitesimal characters are $\left(\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{n} / S_{n}$.
(4) If $\phi=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}} \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ with $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{n}$, the Harish-Chandra parameter

$$
\mathrm{HC}(\pi(\phi, \eta))=\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p} ; \lambda_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \lambda_{q}^{\prime}\right)
$$

of $\pi(\phi, \eta) \in \Pi_{\phi}$ is given so that

- $\left\{\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p}, \lambda_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \lambda_{q}^{\prime}\right\}=\left\{\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right\}$;
- $\alpha_{i} \in\left\{\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p}\right\}$ if and only if $\eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)=(-1)^{i-1}$.

In particular, $\pi(\phi, \eta) \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ with

$$
p=\#\left\{i \mid \eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)=(-1)^{i-1}\right\}, \quad q=\#\left\{i \mid \eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)=(-1)^{i}\right\} .
$$

(5) If $\phi=\xi \oplus \phi_{0} \oplus^{c} \xi^{-1}$ with a unitary character $\xi$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$and an element $\phi_{0}$ in $\Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n-2}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, for any $\pi\left(\phi_{0}, \eta_{0}\right) \in \Pi_{\phi_{0}} \cap \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p-1, q-1))$, the induced representation $\operatorname{Ind}_{P}^{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\xi \otimes \pi\left(\phi_{0}, \eta_{0}\right)\right)$ decomposes as follows:

$$
\operatorname{Ind}_{P}^{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\xi \otimes \pi\left(\phi_{0}, \eta_{0}\right)\right)=\bigoplus_{\substack{\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}, \eta \mid A_{\phi_{0}}=\eta_{0}}} \pi(\phi, \eta)
$$

Here, $P$ is a parabolic subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with Levi subgroup $M_{P}=\mathbb{C}^{\times} \times \mathrm{U}(p-1, q-1)$.
(6) The contragredient representation of $\pi(\phi, \eta)$ is given by $\pi\left(\phi^{\vee}, \eta^{\vee}\right)$, where $\eta^{\vee}: A_{\phi^{\vee}} \rightarrow\{ \pm 1\}$ is defined by

$$
\eta^{\vee}\left(e_{-2 \alpha_{i}}\right)= \begin{cases}\eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right) & \text { if } n \text { is odd } \\ -\eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right) & \text { if } n \text { is even }\end{cases}
$$

for any $e_{-2 \alpha_{i}} \in A_{\phi^{\vee}}$.
(7) If $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta) \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$, then $\pi(\phi,-\eta) \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(q, p))$ is the same representation as $\pi$ via the canonical identification $\mathrm{U}(p, q)=\mathrm{U}(q, p)$ as subgroups of $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$.
(8) If $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, then $\phi \chi_{2}=\phi \otimes \chi_{2} \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and there is a canonical identification $A_{\phi}=A_{\phi \chi_{2}}$. If $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$, the corresponding representation $\pi\left(\phi \chi_{2}, \eta\right)$ is the determinant twist $\pi \otimes$ det.
In fact, the bijection $J: \Pi_{\phi} \rightarrow \widehat{A_{\phi}}$ in Theorem 2.1 (2) is characterized by endoscopic character identities as in [S3]. Also $J$ depends on a choice of a pair of a quasi-split $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ (i.e., $|p-q| \leq 1$ ) and a Whittaker datum of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. There are exactly two such pairs. Through this paper, we take a specific choice of a pair. (see Appendix A). Theorem 2.1 (4) highly depends on this choice, and there seems to be no proper reference. We will discuss this part in Appendix A below.

In Theorem 2.1 (4), we see that

$$
(-1)^{i-1}=\varepsilon\left(\phi \otimes \chi_{-2 \alpha_{i}} \otimes \chi_{-1}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)
$$

Hence the Harish-Chandra parameter of $\pi$ and the unitary group $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ which acts on $\pi$ can be determined by the $L$-parameter $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ of $\pi$ and certain root numbers.
2.3. Local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture. To prove the main result, we use the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture [GGP1], which gives an answer to restriction problems.

Suppose that $\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)=(\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}(p+1, q))$ or $(\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}(p, q+1))$. Then there is a canonical injection $\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R}) \hookrightarrow \mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})$, so that we have a diagonal map

$$
\Delta: \mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R}) \rightarrow \mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R}) \times \mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})
$$

By a result of Sun-Zhu [SZ1], for $\pi_{n} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\pi_{n+1} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, we have

$$
\operatorname{dim}_{\mathbb{C}} \operatorname{Hom}_{\Delta \mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})}\left(\pi_{n} \otimes \pi_{n+1}, \mathbb{C}\right) \leq 1
$$

We call a pair $\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ relevant if

$$
\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)= \begin{cases}(\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}(p+1, q)) & \text { if } n \text { is even } \\ (\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}(p, q+1)) & \text { if } n \text { is odd }\end{cases}
$$

for some $(p, q)$ such that $p+q=n$. Note that if $\left(\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}\left(p^{\prime}, q^{\prime}\right)\right)$ with $p^{\prime}+q^{\prime}=p+q+1$ and $0 \leq p^{\prime}-q, q^{\prime}-q \leq 1$ is not relevant, then $\left(\mathrm{U}(q, p), \mathrm{U}\left(q^{\prime}, p^{\prime}\right)\right)$ is relevant. Gan, Gross and Prasad predicted when the Hom space

$$
\operatorname{Hom}_{\Delta \mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})}\left(\pi_{n} \otimes \pi_{n+1}, \mathbb{C}\right)
$$

is nonzero for relevant pairs.
Conjecture 2.2 (local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (GGP) [GGP1, Conjecture 17.3]). Let $\phi_{n} \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right.$ ) and $\phi_{n+1} \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi_{n} & =\left(m_{1} \chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus m_{u} \chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}\right) \oplus\left(\xi_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \xi_{v}\right) \oplus\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1} \oplus \cdots \oplus{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right), \\
\phi_{n+1} & =\left(m_{1}^{\prime} \chi_{2 \beta_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus m_{u^{\prime}}^{\prime} \chi_{2 \beta_{u^{\prime}}}\right) \oplus\left(\xi_{1}^{\prime} \oplus \cdots \oplus \xi_{v^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right) \oplus\left(\left(^{c} \xi_{1}^{\prime-1} \oplus \cdots \oplus^{c} \xi_{v^{\prime}}^{\prime-1}\right),\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i}, \beta_{j} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv n-1 \bmod 2$ and $2 \beta_{j} \equiv n \bmod 2 ;$
- $m_{i} \geq 1$ (resp. $m_{j}^{\prime} \geq 1$ ) is the multiplicity of $\chi_{2 \alpha_{i}}$ (resp. $\chi_{2 \beta_{j}}$ ) in $\phi_{n}$ (resp. $\phi_{n+1}$ );
- $m_{1}+\cdots+m_{u}+2 v=n$ and $m_{1}^{\prime}+\cdots+m_{u^{\prime}}^{\prime}+2 v^{\prime}=n+1$;
- $\xi_{i}$ (resp. $\xi_{j}^{\prime}$ ) is a unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$, which is not of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ with $2 \alpha \equiv n-1 \bmod 2$ (resp. $\chi_{2 \beta}$ with $2 \beta \equiv n \bmod 2$ ).
Then there exists a unique pair of representations $\left(\pi_{n}, \pi_{n+1}\right) \in \Pi_{\phi_{n}} \times \Pi_{\phi_{n+1}}$ such that
- $\left(\pi_{n}, \pi_{n+1}\right)$ is a pair of representations of a relevant pair $\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$;
- $\operatorname{Hom}_{\Delta \mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})}\left(\pi_{n} \otimes \pi_{n+1}, \mathbb{C}\right) \neq 0$.

Moreover,

$$
\begin{aligned}
J\left(\pi_{n}\right)\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right) & =\varepsilon\left(\chi_{2 \alpha_{i}} \otimes \phi_{n+1}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right), \\
J\left(\pi_{n+1}\right)\left(e_{2 \beta_{j}}\right) & =\varepsilon\left(\phi_{n} \otimes \chi_{2 \beta_{j}}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

for $e_{2 \alpha_{i}} \in A_{\phi_{n}}$ and $e_{2 \beta_{j}} \in A_{\phi_{n+1}}$.
When $\phi_{n} \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\phi_{n+1} \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, Conjecture 2.2 is proven by He $[\mathrm{He} 2]$. In fact, He [He2, Theorem 1.1] only treat the discrete spectrum of $\pi_{n+1} \mid \mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ for $\pi_{n+1} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$. Conjecture 2.2 for discrete series representations follows from this result together with the multiplicity one statement with respect to the Hom-space $\operatorname{Hom}_{\Delta \mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})}\left(\pi_{n} \otimes \pi_{n+1}, \mathbb{C}\right)$ for general tempered $L$-packets shown by Beuzart-Plessis [BP].

We use this conjecture as the following form.
Proposition 2.3. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Let $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right.$ ) and $\phi^{\prime} \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\phi & =\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{u}} \oplus\left(\xi_{1} \oplus \cdots \oplus \xi_{v}\right) \oplus\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1} \oplus \cdots \oplus^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right) \\
\phi^{\prime} & =\chi_{2 \beta_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \beta_{u^{\prime}}} \oplus\left(\xi_{1}^{\prime} \oplus \cdots \oplus \xi_{v^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right) \oplus\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{\prime-1} \oplus \cdots \oplus^{c} \xi_{v^{\prime}}^{\prime-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i}, \beta_{j} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv n-1 \bmod 2$ and $2 \beta_{j} \equiv n \bmod 2$;
- $\xi_{i}$ (resp. $\xi_{j}^{\prime}$ ) is a unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$(which can be of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ (resp. $\chi_{2 \beta}$ ));
- $u+2 v=n$ (resp. $u^{\prime}+2 v^{\prime}=n+1$ ).

Then for $\left(\pi, \pi^{\prime}\right) \in \Pi_{\phi} \times \Pi_{\phi^{\prime}}$, the following are equivalent:

- $\left(\pi, \pi^{\prime}\right) \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q)) \times \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p+1, q))$ for some $(p, q)$ and $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$;
- $J(\pi) \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$ and $J\left(\pi^{\prime}\right) \in \widehat{A_{\phi^{\prime}}}$ are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
J(\pi)\left(e_{2 \alpha}\right) & =(-1)^{\#\left\{j \in\left\{1, \ldots, u^{\prime}\right\} \mid \beta_{j}<\alpha\right\}+n} \\
J\left(\pi^{\prime}\right)\left(e_{2 \beta}\right) & =(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}<\beta\right\}+n}
\end{aligned}
$$

for any $\chi_{2 \alpha} \subset \phi$ so that $e_{2 \alpha} \in A_{\phi}$ and any $\chi_{2 \beta} \subset \phi^{\prime}$ so that $e_{2 \beta} \in A_{\phi^{\prime}}$.

Proof. Note that $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$ if and only if $\operatorname{Hom}_{\Delta \mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime} \otimes \pi^{\vee}, \mathbb{C}\right) \neq 0$ by Riesz representation theorem. First, we assume that $n=p+q$ is even. Then $(\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}(p+1, q))$ is a relevant pair. By the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2), we should see that $\operatorname{Hom}_{\Delta \mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime} \otimes \pi^{\vee}, \mathbb{C}\right) \neq 0$ if and only if

$$
\begin{aligned}
J\left(\pi^{\vee}\right)\left(e_{-2 \alpha}\right) & =\varepsilon\left(\chi_{-2 \alpha} \otimes \phi^{\prime}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{j \in\left\{1, \ldots, u^{\prime}\right\} \mid-\alpha+\beta_{j}>0\right\}} \\
J\left(\pi^{\prime}\right)\left(e_{2 \beta}\right) & =\varepsilon\left(\phi^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{2 \beta}, \psi_{-2}^{\mathbb{C}}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid-\alpha_{i}+\beta>0\right\}}
\end{aligned}
$$

for any $e_{-2 \alpha} \in A_{\phi^{\vee}}$ and any $e_{2 \beta} \in A_{\phi^{\prime}}$. By Theorem 2.1 (6), we see that

$$
J(\pi)\left(e_{2 \alpha}\right)=-J\left(\pi^{\vee}\right)\left(e_{-2 \alpha}\right)=-(-1)^{\#\left\{j \in\left\{1, \ldots, u^{\prime}\right\} \mid \beta_{j}>\alpha\right\}}=(-1)^{\#\left\{j \in\left\{1, \ldots, u^{\prime}\right\} \mid \beta_{j}<\alpha\right\}}
$$

for any $e_{2 \alpha} \in A_{\phi}$ since $u^{\prime} \equiv n+1 \equiv 1 \bmod 2$. Hence we obtain the assertion in the case where $n=p+q$ is even.

Next, we assume that $n=p+q$ is odd. Then $(\mathrm{U}(q, p), \mathrm{U}(q, p+1))$ is a relevant pair. By Theorem 2.1 (7), we see that $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$ if and only if $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(q, p)}\left(\pi\left(\phi^{\prime},-J\left(\pi^{\prime}\right)\right), \pi(\phi,-J(\pi))\right) \neq 0$. By a similar argument to the first case, this is equivalent to saying that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -J(\pi)\left(e_{2 \alpha}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{j \in\left\{1, \ldots, u^{\prime}\right\} \mid \beta_{j}<\alpha\right\}} \\
& -J\left(\pi^{\prime}\right)\left(e_{2 \beta}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}<\beta\right\}}
\end{aligned}
$$

for any $e_{2 \alpha} \in A_{\phi}$ and any $e_{2 \beta} \in A_{\phi^{\prime}}$. Hence we obtain the assertion in the case where $n=p+q$ is odd. This completes the proof.

## 3. Theta liftings

In this subsection, we review the theory of theta liftings. First, we recall Kudla's splitting [Ku2] of a unitary dual pair (§3.1). Then we can consider theta lifts of irreducible unitary representations of unitary groups as in $\S 1.2$. On the other hand, in various results, including Paul's ones ([P1, P2, P3]), irreducible genuine representations of certain double covers of unitary groups are used for theta lifts. We compare Kudla's splitting with double covers of unitary groups in $\S 3.2$. In $\S 3.3$ and $\S 3.4$, we recall basic properties on theta liftings and Paul's results [P1, P3], respectively.
3.1. Kudla's splitting. Let $W=W_{p, q}$ (resp. $V=V_{r, s}$ ) be a (right) complex vector space of dimension $n=p+q$ (resp. $m=r+s$ ) equipped with a hermitian form $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{W}$ (resp. a skew-hermitian form $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{V}$ ) of signature $(p, q)$ (resp. $(r, s)$ ). Namely,

- the pairings $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{W}$ and $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{V}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left\langle w_{1} a, w_{2} b\right\rangle_{W}=a \bar{b}\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle_{W}, \quad\left\langle w_{2}, w_{1}\right\rangle_{W}=\overline{\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle_{W}}, \\
\left\langle v_{1} a, v_{2} b\right\rangle_{V}=a \bar{b}\left\langle v_{1}, v_{2}\right\rangle_{V}, \quad\left\langle v_{2}, v_{1}\right\rangle_{V}=-\overline{\left\langle v_{1}, v_{2}\right\rangle_{V}}
\end{gathered}
$$

for $a, b \in \mathbb{C}, w_{1}, w_{2} \in W$ and $v_{1}, v_{2} \in V$;

- there exist $e_{1}, \ldots, e_{n} \in W$ and $e_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, e_{m}^{\prime} \in V$ such that

$$
\left\langle e_{i}, e_{j}\right\rangle_{W}=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
0 & \text { if } i \neq j, \\
1 & \text { if } i=j \leq p, \\
-1 & \text { if } i=j>p,
\end{array} \quad\left\langle e_{i}^{\prime}, e_{j}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{V}= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } i \neq j \\
\sqrt{-1} & \text { if } i=j \leq r \\
-\sqrt{-1} & \text { if } i=j>r\end{cases}\right.
$$

The isometry group $\mathrm{U}(W)$ of $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{W}$ (resp. $\mathrm{U}(V)$ of $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{V}$ ), which has a left action on $W$ (resp. on $V$ ), is isomorphic to $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ (resp. $\mathrm{U}(r, s)$ ). Let $\mathbb{W}=V \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} W$ be the symplectic space over $\mathbb{R}$ of dimension $2 m n$ equipped with the symplectic form

$$
\left\langle v_{1} \otimes w_{1}, v_{2} \otimes w_{2}\right\rangle=\operatorname{tr}_{\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R}}\left(\left\langle v_{1}, v_{2}\right\rangle_{V} \cdot\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle_{W}\right)
$$

for $v_{1}, v_{2} \in V$ and $w_{1}, w_{2} \in W$. The symplectic group $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$ acts on $\mathbb{W}$ on the left.
We note that the convention in [Ku2] and [HKS] differs from ours. They use the following:

- $W^{\prime}$ is a left vector space and the hermitian form $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{W^{\prime}}$ on $W^{\prime}$ satisfies

$$
\left\langle a w_{1}^{\prime}, b w_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{W^{\prime}}=a\left\langle w_{1}^{\prime}, w_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{W^{\prime}} \bar{b}
$$

for $a, b \in \mathbb{C}$ and $w_{1}^{\prime}, w_{2}^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}$;

- $V^{\prime}$ is a right vector space and the skew-hermitian form $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{V^{\prime}}$ on $V^{\prime}$ satisfies

$$
\left\langle v_{1}^{\prime} a, v_{2}^{\prime} b\right\rangle_{V^{\prime}}=\bar{a}\left\langle v_{1}^{\prime}, v_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{V^{\prime}} b
$$

for $a, b \in \mathbb{C}$ and $v_{1}^{\prime}, v_{2}^{\prime} \in V^{\prime}$;

- the symplectic form on $\mathbb{W}^{\prime}=V^{\prime} \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} W^{\prime}$ is defined by

$$
\left\langle v_{1}^{\prime} \otimes w_{1}^{\prime}, v_{2}^{\prime} \otimes w_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle^{\prime}=\frac{1}{2} \cdot \operatorname{tr}_{\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R}}\left(\left\langle v_{1}^{\prime}, v_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{V^{\prime}} \cdot \overline{\left\langle w_{1}^{\prime}, w_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{W^{\prime}}}\right)
$$

for $v_{1}^{\prime}, v_{2}^{\prime} \in V^{\prime}$ and $w_{1}^{\prime}, w_{2}^{\prime} \in W^{\prime}$;

- $\mathrm{U}\left(W^{\prime}\right), \mathrm{U}\left(V^{\prime}\right)$ and $\operatorname{Sp}\left(\mathbb{W}^{\prime}\right)$ act on $W^{\prime}, V^{\prime}$ and $\mathbb{W}^{\prime}$ on the right, left and right, respectively.

To use results in $[\mathrm{Ku} 2]$ and $[\mathrm{HKS}]$, we have to compare these conventions.
First, we compare $\mathrm{U}(W)$ with $\mathrm{U}\left(W^{\prime}\right)$. Assume that $W^{\prime}$ has a basis $\left\{e_{1}, \ldots, e_{n}\right\}$ satisfying the same conditions as above, so that $W=W^{\prime}$. However, since $W$ is a right $\mathbb{C}$-vector space, whereas, $W^{\prime}$ is a left $\mathbb{C}$-vector space, we obtain expressions

$$
\begin{aligned}
W & =\left\{\begin{array}{ccc}
\left.\left(\begin{array}{lll}
e_{1} & \ldots & e_{n}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{1} \\
\vdots \\
a_{n}
\end{array}\right) \right\rvert\, a_{i} \in \mathbb{C}
\end{array}\right\} \cong \mathbb{C}^{n} \quad \text { (column vectors) }, \\
W^{\prime} & =\left\{\left.\left(\begin{array}{lll}
a_{1}^{\prime} & \ldots & a_{n}^{\prime}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
e_{1} \\
\vdots \\
e_{n}
\end{array}\right) \right\rvert\, a_{i}^{\prime} \in \mathbb{C}\right\} \cong \mathbb{C}^{n} \quad \text { (row vectors). }
\end{aligned}
$$

Via the $\mathbb{C}$-linear isomorphism

$$
W \ni w=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
e_{1} & \ldots & e_{n}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
a_{1} \\
\vdots \\
a_{n}
\end{array}\right) \mapsto w^{\prime}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
a_{1} & \ldots & a_{n}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
e_{1} \\
\vdots \\
e_{n}
\end{array}\right) \in W^{\prime}
$$

we identify $W$ with $W^{\prime}$. Then we have $\left\langle w_{1}^{\prime}, w_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{W^{\prime}}=\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle_{W}$ for any $w_{1}, w_{2} \in W$. Also, via the identifications $W \cong \mathbb{C}^{n}$ (row vectors) and $W^{\prime} \cong \mathbb{C}^{n}$ (column vectors), we have expressions

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{U}(W) & =\left\{g \in \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C}) \left\lvert\,{ }^{t} g\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right) \bar{g}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right)\right.\right\} \\
\mathrm{U}\left(W^{\prime}\right) & =\left\{g^{\prime} \in \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C}) \left\lvert\, g^{\prime}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right){ }^{t} \overline{g^{\prime}}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right)\right.\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

The above identification $W=W^{\prime}$ implies the map

$$
\mathrm{U}(W) \ni g \mapsto{ }^{t} g \in \mathrm{U}\left(W^{\prime}\right)
$$

Next, we compare $\mathrm{U}(V)$ with $\mathrm{U}\left(V^{\prime}\right)$. Assume that $V^{\prime}$ has a basis $\left\{e_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, e_{m}^{\prime}\right\}$ so that $V=V^{\prime}$ as right $\mathbb{C}$-vector spaces. Set the skew-hermitian pairing $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{V^{\prime}}$ by

$$
\left\langle v_{1}^{\prime}, v_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{V^{\prime}}=2 \overline{\left\langle v_{1}, v_{2}\right\rangle_{V}}
$$

for elements $v_{1}=v_{1}^{\prime}$ and $v_{2}=v_{2}^{\prime}$ in $V=V^{\prime}$. Note that the signature of $V^{\prime}$ is $(s, r)$. We have expressions

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{U}(V)=\left\{h \in \mathrm{GL}_{m}(\mathbb{C}) \left\lvert\, \begin{array}{cc}
{ }^{t} h\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{r} & 0 \\
0 & -\sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{s}
\end{array}\right) \bar{h}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{p} & 0 \\
0 & -\sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right)
\end{array}\right.\right\}, \\
& \mathrm{U}\left(V^{\prime}\right)=\left\{h^{\prime} \in \mathrm{GL}_{m}(\mathbb{C}) \left\lvert\, \begin{array}{cc}
t \\
h^{\prime}
\end{array}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
-2 \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{r} & 0 \\
0 & 2 \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{s}
\end{array}\right) h^{\prime}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
-2 \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{r} & 0 \\
0 & 2 \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{s}
\end{array}\right)\right.\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $\mathrm{U}\left(V^{\prime}\right)$ coincides with $\mathrm{U}(V)$ as subgroups of $\mathrm{GL}_{m}(\mathbb{C})$.

Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\langle v_{1}^{\prime} \otimes w_{1}^{\prime}, v_{2}^{\prime} \otimes w_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle^{\prime} & =\frac{1}{2} \cdot \operatorname{tr}_{\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R}}\left(\left\langle v_{1}^{\prime}, v_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{V^{\prime}} \cdot \overline{\left\langle w_{1}^{\prime}, w_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{W^{\prime}}}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{tr}_{\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R}}\left(\overline{\left\langle v_{1}, v_{2}\right\rangle_{V} \cdot\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle_{W}}\right)=\left\langle v_{1} \otimes w_{1}, v_{2} \otimes w_{2}\right\rangle
\end{aligned}
$$

for $v_{1}, v_{2} \in V$ and $w_{1}, w_{2} \in W$, we see that the two symplectic forms on $\mathbb{W}=\mathbb{W}^{\prime}$ agree.
Note that both $\mathrm{U}(W)$ and $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$ act on $W$ and $\mathbb{W}$ on the left, respectively, whereas, $\mathrm{U}\left(W^{\prime}\right)$ and $\operatorname{Sp}\left(\mathbb{W}^{\prime}\right)$ act on $W^{\prime}$ and $\mathbb{W}^{\prime}$ on the right, respectively. Hence the canonical embedding $\alpha=\alpha_{V}: \mathrm{U}(W) \rightarrow \operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$ coincides with the counterpart $\alpha^{\prime}=\alpha_{V^{\prime}}: \mathrm{U}\left(W^{\prime}\right) \rightarrow \operatorname{Sp}\left(\mathbb{W}^{\prime}\right)$ via the above identifications. Therefore the results in $[\mathrm{Ku} 2]$ can be transferred to our convention.

Fix a non-trivial additive character $\psi$ of $\mathbb{R}$. Let $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$ be the $\mathbb{C}^{1}$-cover of $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$, i.e.,

$$
1 \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}^{1} \longrightarrow \mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{W}) \longrightarrow \mathrm{Sp}(\mathbb{W}) \longrightarrow 1
$$

Choosing a character $\chi=\chi_{V}$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$such that $\chi \mid \mathbb{R}^{\times}=\operatorname{sgn}^{m}$ with $m=r+s=\operatorname{dim}(V)$, Kudla gave a splitting


Lemma 3.1. We identify $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})=\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W}) \times \mathbb{C}^{1}$ as sets as in $[\mathrm{Ku} 2]$. If we write $\widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi}(g)=\left(\alpha(g), \beta_{\chi}(g)\right)$ for $g \in \mathrm{U}(W)$, then $\beta_{\chi}(g)$ satisfies that

$$
\beta_{\chi}(g)^{8}=\chi(\operatorname{det}(g))^{4}
$$

Proof. Let $W_{-}$denote the space $W$ with the hermitian form $-\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle_{W}$. Consider the space $W \oplus W_{-}$. Now we have a canonical embedding

$$
\Delta: \mathrm{U}(W) \times \mathrm{U}\left(W_{-}\right) \rightarrow \mathrm{U}\left(W \oplus W_{-}\right)
$$

Let $x(\Delta(g, 1))$ be Rao's function (see $[\mathrm{Ku} 2, \S 1])$. Note that $x\left(\Delta(g, 1)\right.$ ) is an element in $\mathbb{C}^{\times} / \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ ([Ku2, Corollary 1.5]). By [Ku2, Lemma 3.5], it satisfies that

$$
\operatorname{det}(g)^{2}=\left(x(\Delta(g, 1)) \cdot \overline{x(\Delta(g, 1))}^{-1}\right)^{2}
$$

By [Ku2, Theorems 3.1, 3.3], we have

$$
\beta_{\chi}(g)=\chi(x(\Delta(g, 1))) \zeta
$$

for some 8-th root of unity $\zeta$. Since $\chi^{2} \mid \mathbb{R}^{\times}=1$, we have

$$
\beta_{\chi}(g)^{8}=\chi(x(\Delta(g, 1)))^{8}=\chi\left(x(\Delta(g, 1)) \cdot \overline{x(\Delta(g, 1))}^{-1}\right)^{4}=\chi(\operatorname{det}(g))^{4}
$$

This completes the proof.
3.2. Double cover of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. Let $W, V$ and $\mathbb{W}$ be as in $\S 3.1$. Then we have a canonical map $\alpha=$ $\alpha_{V}: \mathrm{U}(W) \rightarrow \mathrm{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$. Let $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$ be the double cover of $\mathrm{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$, which is a closed subgroup of $\mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$, i.e.,

$$
1 \longrightarrow \widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W}) \longrightarrow 1\} \longrightarrow \mathrm{Sp}(\mathbb{W}) \longrightarrow 1
$$

Fix $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\nu \equiv m=r+s \bmod 2$ and define the $\operatorname{det}^{\nu / 2}$-cover of $\mathrm{U}(W)$ by

$$
\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)=\left\{(g, z) \in \mathrm{U}(W) \times \mathbb{C}^{1} \mid z^{2}=\operatorname{det}(g)^{\nu}\right\}
$$

It has a genuine character

$$
\operatorname{det}^{\nu / 2}: \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times},(g, z) \mapsto z
$$

Hence the set of genuine tempered representations of $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$ is given by

$$
\operatorname{Irr}_{\mathrm{temp}}(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W))=\left\{\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-\nu / 2} \mid \pi \in \operatorname{Ir}_{\mathrm{temp}}(\mathrm{U}(W))\right\}
$$

As in [P1, §1.2], we have a homomorphism

$$
\widetilde{\alpha}=\widetilde{\alpha}_{V}: \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W) \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})
$$

such that $\widetilde{\alpha}(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W))$ is the inverse image of $\alpha(\mathrm{U}(W))$, and the diagram

is commutative, where the left arrow is the first projection. We write the composition of $\widetilde{\alpha}: \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W) \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$ with the inclusion map $\widetilde{\operatorname{Sp}}(\mathbb{W}) \hookrightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})=\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W}) \times \mathbb{C}^{1}$ as

$$
(g, z) \mapsto(\alpha(g), \beta(g, z))
$$

Note that $\beta(g,-z)=-\beta(g, z)$. We put $\mu_{8}=\left\{\zeta \in \mathbb{C}^{\times} \mid \zeta^{8}=1\right\}$ to be the set of 8 -th roots of unity in $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$.
Lemma 3.2. For any $(g, z) \in \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$, the value $\beta(g, z)$ belongs to $\mu_{8}$.
Proof. We write

$$
\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})=\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W}) \times \mathbb{C}^{1}, \quad \widetilde{\operatorname{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})=\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W}) \times\{ \pm 1\}
$$

as sets. The multiplication law of $\mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$ is given by $\left(h_{1}, z_{1}\right) \cdot\left(h_{2}, z_{2}\right)=\left(h_{1} h_{2}, z_{1} z_{2} c\left(h_{1}, h_{2}\right)\right)$, where $c\left(h_{1}, h_{2}\right)$ is Rao's 2-cocycle (see [Ra] and [Ku2]). By [Ra, Theorem 4.1 (5)] (cf. [Ku2, Theorem]), $c\left(g_{1}, g_{2}\right)$ is a Weil index, which is an 8-th root of unity. We write the inclusion map $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W}) \hookrightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$ as

$$
(h, \epsilon) \mapsto(h, \gamma(h, \epsilon)) .
$$

When $\left(h_{1}, \epsilon_{1}\right) \cdot\left(h_{2}, \epsilon_{2}\right)=\left(h_{1} h_{2}, \epsilon_{3}\right)$ in $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$, we see that

$$
\gamma\left(h_{1} h_{2}, \epsilon_{3}\right)=\gamma\left(h_{1}, \epsilon_{1}\right) \gamma\left(h_{2}, \epsilon_{2}\right) c\left(h_{1}, h_{2}\right) .
$$

Since $\gamma(h,-\epsilon)=-\gamma(h, \epsilon)$, we see that $(h, \epsilon) \mapsto \gamma(h, \epsilon)^{8}$ factors through a group homomorphism of $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$. Since $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W})$ is semisimple, there exists a dense subset $X$ of $\widetilde{\operatorname{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$ such that $\gamma(h, \epsilon) \in \mu_{8}$ for any $(h, \epsilon) \in X$. Since $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$ is closed in $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$, the closure of $X$ in $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$, which is contained in $\operatorname{Sp}(\mathbb{W}) \times \mu_{8} \subset \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$, coincides with $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$. This means that $\gamma(h, \epsilon) \in \mu_{8}$ for any $(h, \epsilon) \in \widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$. In particular, since the map $(g, z) \mapsto(\alpha(g), \beta(g, z))$ factors through $\widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W}) \hookrightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$, we conclude that $\beta(g, z)$ is an 8 -th root of unity for any $(g, z) \in \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$.

Now we compare $\beta_{\chi}(g)$ with $\beta(g, z)$.
Proposition 3.3. Fix $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\nu \equiv m \bmod 2$. Let $\chi=\chi_{\nu}$ be the character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$given by

$$
\chi\left(a e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta}\right)=e^{\nu \sqrt{-1} \theta}
$$

for $a>0$ and $\theta \in \mathbb{R} / 2 \pi \mathbb{Z}$. Suppose that $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$ is the $\operatorname{det}^{\nu / 2}$-cover of $\mathrm{U}(W)$, i.e., $z^{2}=\operatorname{det}(g)^{\nu}$ when $(g, z) \in \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$. Then

$$
\beta_{\chi}(g)=\beta(g, z) z
$$

for any $(g, z) \in \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$.
Proof. Since the maps $\mathrm{U}(W) \rightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W}), g \mapsto\left(\alpha(g), \beta_{\chi}(g)\right)$ and $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W) \rightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W}),(g, z) \mapsto(\alpha(g), \beta(g, z))$ are homomorphism, we see that

$$
\beta_{\chi}\left(g_{1} g_{2}\right) \beta_{\chi}\left(g_{1}\right)^{-1} \beta_{\chi}\left(g_{2}\right)^{-1}=c\left(\alpha\left(g_{1}\right), \alpha\left(g_{2}\right)\right)=\beta\left(g_{1} g_{2}, z_{1} z_{2}\right) \beta\left(g_{1}, z_{1}\right)^{-1} \beta\left(g_{2}, z_{2}\right)^{-1}
$$

for any $\left(g_{1}, z_{1}\right),\left(g_{2}, z_{2}\right) \in \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$. This implies that the map

$$
\eta: \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W) \ni(g, z) \mapsto \frac{\beta_{\chi}(g)}{\beta(g, z) z} \in \mathbb{C}^{1}
$$

factors through a group homomorphism $\eta$ of $\mathrm{U}(W)$. Since

$$
\left(\frac{\beta_{\chi}(g)}{\beta(g, z) z}\right)^{8}=\frac{\chi(\operatorname{det}(g))^{4}}{\operatorname{det}(g)^{4 \nu}}=1
$$

for any $(g, z) \in \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$, we may regard this map as a group homomorphism

$$
\eta: \mathrm{U}(W) \rightarrow \mu_{8}, g \mapsto \frac{\beta_{\chi}(g)}{\beta(g, z) z}
$$

Since $\mathrm{U}(W)$ is a Lie group, we can find an open neighborhood $X$ of 1 such that for any $g \in X$, there exists $h \in \mathrm{U}(W)$ such that $g=h^{8}$. This means that $X$ is contained in the kernel of $\eta$, so that $\eta$ is continuous. In conclusion, $\eta$ is a (continuous) character of $\mathrm{U}(W)$ of finite order. Since $\mathrm{U}(W)$ is connected, it must be the trivial character. Hence $\beta_{\chi}(g)=\beta(g, z) z$.
3.3. Basic properties of theta liftings. Through this paper, for each hermitian space $W=W_{p, q}$ and each skew-hermitian space $V=V_{r, s}$ as in $\S 3.1$, we fix characters $\chi_{W}=\chi_{W_{p, q}}$ and $\chi_{V}=\chi_{V_{r, s}}$ such that

- $\chi_{W} \mid \mathbb{R}^{\times}=\operatorname{sgn}^{n}$ and $\chi_{V} \mid \mathbb{R}^{\times}=\operatorname{sgn}^{m}$ with $n=p+q=\operatorname{dim}(W)$ and $m=r+s=\operatorname{dim}(V)$, respectively;
- $\chi_{W}$ and $\chi_{V}$ depend only on $n \bmod 2$ and $m \bmod 2$, respectively,
and a non-trivial additive character $\psi$ of $\mathbb{R}$.
Let $W=W_{p, q}$ and $V=V_{r, s}$, and set $\mathbb{W}=V \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} W$ as in $\S 3.1$. Then the isometry groups $\mathrm{U}(W)$ and $\mathrm{U}(V)$ are isomorphic to $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ and $\mathrm{U}(r, s)$, respectively. We have a canonical map

$$
\alpha_{V} \times \alpha_{W}: \mathrm{U}(W) \times \mathrm{U}(V) \rightarrow \mathrm{Sp}(\mathbb{W})
$$

As in $\S 3.1$, we have a splitting

$$
\widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}} \times \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{W}}: \mathrm{U}(W) \times \mathrm{U}(V) \rightarrow \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})
$$

of $\alpha_{V} \times \alpha_{W}$. On the other hand, as in $\S 3.2$, there are two-fold covers $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$ and $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(V)$ of $\mathrm{U}(W)$ and $\mathrm{U}(V)$, respectively, and a lifting

$$
\widetilde{\alpha}_{V} \times \widetilde{\alpha}_{W}: \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W) \times \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(V) \rightarrow \widetilde{\mathrm{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})
$$

of $\alpha_{V} \times \alpha_{W}$.
For $a \in \mathbb{R}^{\times}$, we define an additive character $a \psi$ of $\mathbb{R}$ by

$$
(a \psi)(x)=\psi(a x)
$$

for $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $\omega_{a \psi}$ be the Weil representation of $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$ associated to $a \psi$. It is a smooth representation satisfying that $\omega_{a \psi}(z)=z \cdot$ id for $z \in \mathbb{C}^{1} \subset \operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$. Moreover, $\omega_{a \psi} \cong \omega_{a^{\prime} \psi}$ if and only if $a a^{\prime}>0$. Hence there are exactly two Weil representations of $\operatorname{Mp}(\mathbb{W})$. By the restriction, $\omega_{a \psi}$ is regarded as a representation of $\widetilde{\operatorname{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$ also. We choose $\psi$ such that $\omega_{\psi}$ is the Weil representation of $\widetilde{\operatorname{Sp}}(\mathbb{W})$ which Paul has used in [P1, P2, P3] (c.f., [P1, Lemma 1.4.5]). We consider two representations $\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}}$ of $\mathrm{U}(W)$ and $\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{V}$ of $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$. For $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(W))$ and $\widetilde{\pi} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W))$, the maximal $\pi$-isotypic quotient of $\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}}$ and the maximal $\widetilde{\pi}$-isotypic quotient of $\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{V}$ are of the form

$$
\pi \boxtimes \Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \quad \text { and } \quad \widetilde{\pi} \boxtimes \Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})
$$

where $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})$ are (genuine or possibly zero) representations of $\mathrm{U}(V)$ and $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(V)$, respectively. We call $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ (resp. $\left.\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})\right)$ the big theta lift of $\pi$ (resp. $\widetilde{\pi}$ ).

Theorem 3.4 (Howe duality correspondence [Ho, Theorem 2.1]). If $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ (resp. $\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})$ ) is nonzero, then it has a unique irreducible quotient $\theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ (resp. $\theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})$ ).

We interpret $\theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ (resp. $\left.\theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})\right)$ to be zero if so is $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ (resp. $\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})$ ). We call $\theta_{r, s}(\pi)\left(\operatorname{resp} . \theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})\right)$ the small theta lift of $\pi$ (resp. $\widetilde{\pi})$. Similarly, for $\sigma \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(V))\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\widetilde{\sigma} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(V))\right)$, we can define the big and small theta lifts $\Theta_{p, q}(\sigma)$ and $\theta_{p, q}(\sigma)\left(\operatorname{resp} . \Theta_{p, s}(\widetilde{\sigma})\right.$ and $\left.\theta_{p, q}(\widetilde{\sigma})\right)$. Note that there is a Harish-Chandra module version of theta correspondence. These two versions agree by [BS].

In this paper, we determine explicitly when $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ (resp. $\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})$ ) is nonzero for $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ (resp. $\left.\widetilde{\pi} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q))\right)$. A relation between the non-vanishing of $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ and the one of $\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi})$ is given as follows:

Proposition 3.5. Suppose that $\chi_{V}=\chi_{\nu}$ with $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\nu \equiv m \bmod 2$. Then for any $\pi \in$ $\operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(W))$, we have

$$
\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(W)}\left(\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}}, \pi\right) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow \operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)}\left(\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{V}, \pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-\nu / 2}\right) \neq 0
$$

In particular, $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$ if and only if $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-\nu / 2}\right) \neq 0$.
Proof. For $(g, z) \in \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$, by Proposition 3.3, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{V}\right) \otimes \operatorname{det}^{\nu / 2}(g, z) & =\omega_{\psi}\left(\alpha_{V}(g), \beta(g, z)\right) z \\
& =\omega_{\psi}\left(\alpha_{V}(g), \beta(g, z) z\right) \\
& =\omega_{\psi}\left(\alpha_{V}(g), \beta_{\chi_{V}}(g)\right) \\
& =\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}}(g)
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $\left(\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{V}\right) \otimes \operatorname{det}^{\nu / 2}=\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}}$ as representations of $\mathrm{U}(W)$, so that

$$
\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(W)}\left(\left(\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}\right) \otimes \operatorname{det}^{\nu / 2}, \pi\right) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(W)}\left(\omega_{\psi} \circ \widetilde{\alpha}_{\chi_{V}}, \pi\right) \neq 0
$$

This completes the proof.
If $\chi_{V}=\chi_{\nu}$ with $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\nu \equiv m \bmod 2$, the genuine character $\operatorname{det}^{\nu / 2}$ of $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(W)$ is also denoted by $\chi_{V}$. Hence $\chi_{V}^{2}$ is the character $\operatorname{det}^{\nu}$ of $\mathrm{U}(W)$. By Proposition $3.5, \Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$ if and only if $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\pi \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}\right) \neq 0$.

Now we recall basic properties on the theta correspondence. First, we state a proposition which is called the tower property or Kudla's persistence principle.

Proposition 3.6 (Tower property [Ku1]). If $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ is nonzero, then $\Theta_{r+l, s+l}(\pi)$ is also nonzero for any $l \geq 0$.

Next, we state the conservation relation. Fix $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$. For each integer $d$, we consider a set of theta lifts $\left\{\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \mid r-s=d\right\}$. We call this set the $d$-th Witt tower of theta lifts of $\pi$. Also we call

$$
m_{d}(\pi)=\min \left\{r+s \mid \Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0, r-s=d\right\}
$$

the first occurrence index of the $d$-th Witt tower of theta lifts of $\pi$.
Theorem 3.7 (Conservation relation [SZ2]). Fix $\delta \in\{0,1\}$ and set

$$
m_{ \pm}(\pi)=\min \left\{m_{d}(\pi) \mid d \equiv \delta \bmod 2,(-1)^{\frac{d-\delta}{2}}= \pm 1\right\}
$$

Then

$$
m_{+}(\pi)+m_{-}(\pi)=2 n+2
$$

for any $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ with $n=p+q$.
The following is a consequence of the induction principle ( $[\mathrm{P} 1$, Theorem 4.5.5]).
Proposition 3.8 (Induction principle). Let $\pi_{0} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}\left(p_{0}, q_{0}\right)\right)$. Suppose that $\Theta_{r_{0}, s_{0}}\left(\pi_{0}\right)$ is nonzero for some $\left(r_{0}, s_{0}\right)$. Let $\xi_{1}, \ldots, \xi_{v}$ be unitary characters of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$. Put $p=p_{0}+v, q=q_{0}+v, r=r_{0}+v$ and $s=s_{0}+v$. Then there exists an irreducible subquotient $\pi$ of the induced representation

$$
\operatorname{Ind}_{P}^{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\xi_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \xi_{v} \otimes \pi_{0}\right)
$$

such that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ is nonzero, where $P$ is a parabolic subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with Levi subgroup of the form $\left(\mathbb{C}^{\times}\right)^{v} \times \mathrm{U}\left(p_{0}, q_{0}\right)$.

For a relation between theta lifts and contragredient representations, the following is known.
Proposition 3.9. Let $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$. If $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$, then $\Theta_{s, r}\left(\pi^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{V}^{2}\right) \neq 0$.
Proof. By Proposition 3.5, $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$ if and only if $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\pi \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}\right) \neq 0$. Similarly, $\Theta_{s, r}\left(\pi^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{V}^{2}\right) \neq 0$ if and only if $\Theta_{s, r}\left(\pi^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{V}\right) \neq 0$. Hence the proposition follows from [P1, Proposition 2.1].

There is a non-vanishing result of theta lifts of one dimensional representations.

Proposition 3.10. Fix a positive integer $t$ and a half integer $l$ such that $2 l \equiv t \bmod 2$ and $-t / 2<l<t / 2$. Let $\operatorname{det}^{l}$ be a genuine character of the $\operatorname{det}^{l}$-cover $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)$. If $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\operatorname{det}^{l} \otimes \chi_{V_{r, s}}\right) \neq 0$ and $|r-s|=t$, then $\min \{r, s\} \geq p+q$.
Proof. Note that det ${ }^{l} \otimes \chi_{V_{r, s}}$ is a character of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. By Proposition 3.5, $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\operatorname{det}^{l} \otimes \chi_{V_{r, s}}\right) \neq 0$ if and only if $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\operatorname{det}^{l}\right) \neq 0$. Hence the proposition is a restatement of [P2, Lemma 3.1].

We denote by $\omega_{p, q, r, s}$ the Weil representation of $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q) \times \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(r, s)$, i.e., $\omega_{p, q, r, s}=\omega_{\psi} \circ\left(\widetilde{\alpha}_{V} \times \widetilde{\alpha}_{W}\right)$. The following are called seesaw identities, which are key properties to prove the main result (Theorem 4.2 below).

Proposition 3.11 (Seesaw identity). (1) For $\widetilde{\pi} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q))$ and $\widetilde{\sigma} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(r, s))$, we have

$$
\operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)}\left(\Theta_{p+p^{\prime}, q+q^{\prime}}(\widetilde{\sigma}), \widetilde{\pi}\right) \cong \operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(r, s)}\left(\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi}) \otimes \omega_{p^{\prime}, q^{\prime}, r, s}, \widetilde{\sigma}\right)
$$

In particular, if there is $\pi^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}\left(p+p^{\prime}, q+q^{\prime}\right)\right)$ such that $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$ and $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\pi^{\prime}\right) \neq 0$, then $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$.
(2) For $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$, $\widetilde{\sigma}_{1} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}\left(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}\left(r_{1}, s_{1}\right)\right)$ and $\widetilde{\sigma}_{2} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}\left(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}\left(s_{2}, r_{2}\right)\right)$ with $r_{1}+s_{1} \equiv r_{2}+$ $s_{2} \bmod 2$, we have

$$
\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\Theta_{p, q}\left(\widetilde{\sigma}_{1}\right) \otimes \Theta_{p, q}\left(\widetilde{\sigma}_{2}\right), \pi\right) \cong \operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}\left(r_{1}, s_{1}\right) \times \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}\left(s_{2}, r_{2}\right)}\left(\Theta_{r_{1}+s_{2}, s_{1}+r_{2}}(\widetilde{\pi}), \widetilde{\sigma}_{1} \otimes \widetilde{\sigma}_{2}\right)
$$

where $\widetilde{\pi}$ is the genuine representation of the trivial cover $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)=\mathrm{U}(p, q) \times\{ \pm 1\}$ defined by $\widetilde{\pi} \mid \mathrm{U}(p, q)=\pi$. In particular, for a unitary character $\chi$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, if there is $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ such that $\Theta_{r_{1}, s_{1}}(\pi) \neq 0$ and $\Theta_{r_{2}, s_{2}}\left(\pi \otimes \chi^{-1}\right) \neq 0$, then $\Theta_{r_{1}+s_{2}, s_{1}+r_{2}}\left(\widetilde{\chi} \cdot \chi_{V_{0,0}}\right) \neq 0$.
Proof. The first assertions of (1) and (2) immediately follow from [P1, Lemma 2.8].
We show the last assertion of (1). Set $\widetilde{\pi}=\pi \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}$ and $\widetilde{\pi}^{\prime}=\pi^{\prime} \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}$. If $\operatorname{Hom}_{U(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$ and $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\pi^{\prime}\right) \neq 0$ then $\operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)}\left(\widetilde{\pi}^{\prime}, \widetilde{\pi}\right) \neq 0$ and $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\widetilde{\pi}^{\prime}\right) \neq 0$. If we put $\widetilde{\sigma}=\theta_{r, s}\left(\widetilde{\pi}^{\prime}\right)$, then $\widetilde{\pi}^{\prime}$ is a quotient of $\Theta_{p+p^{\prime}, q+q^{\prime}}(\widetilde{\sigma})$. Hence we have

$$
0 \neq \operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)}\left(\widetilde{\pi}^{\prime}, \widetilde{\pi}\right) \subset \operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)}\left(\Theta_{p+p^{\prime}, q+q^{\prime}}(\widetilde{\sigma}), \widetilde{\pi}\right) \cong \operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(r, s)}\left(\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi}) \otimes \omega_{p^{\prime}, q^{\prime}, r, s}, \widetilde{\sigma}\right)
$$

In particular, we have $\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi}) \neq 0$ so that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$.
We show the last assertion of (2). We denote $\chi_{V}=\chi_{V_{r_{1}, s_{1}}}=\chi_{V_{r_{2}, s_{2}}}$ and $\chi_{V_{0,0}}=\chi_{V_{r_{1}+s_{2}, s_{1}+r_{2}}}$. By Proposition 3.9, we have $\Theta_{s_{2}, r_{2}}\left(\pi^{\vee} \otimes \chi \chi_{V}^{2}\right) \neq 0$. Set $\widetilde{\pi}_{1}=\pi \otimes \chi_{V}^{-1}$ and $\widetilde{\pi}_{2}=\pi^{\vee} \otimes \chi \chi_{V}$. Then $\widetilde{\sigma}_{1}=$ $\theta_{r_{1}, s_{1}}\left(\widetilde{\pi}_{1}\right) \neq 0, \widetilde{\sigma}_{2}=\theta_{s_{2}, r_{2}}\left(\widetilde{\pi}_{2}\right) \neq 0$, and there exist surjections

$$
\Theta_{p, q}\left(\widetilde{\sigma}_{1}\right) \otimes \Theta_{p, q}\left(\widetilde{\sigma}_{2}\right) \rightarrow \widetilde{\pi}_{1} \otimes \widetilde{\pi}_{2} \rightarrow \chi
$$

as representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. Since

$$
0 \neq \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\Theta_{p, q}\left(\widetilde{\sigma}_{1}\right) \otimes \Theta_{p, q}\left(\widetilde{\sigma}_{2}\right), \chi\right) \cong \operatorname{Hom}_{\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}\left(r_{1}, s_{1}\right) \times \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}\left(s_{2}, r_{2}\right)}\left(\Theta_{r_{1}+s_{2}, s_{1}+r_{2}}(\widetilde{\chi}), \widetilde{\sigma}_{1} \otimes \widetilde{\sigma}_{2}\right)
$$

we have $\Theta_{r_{1}+s_{2}, s_{1}+r_{2}}(\widetilde{\chi}) \neq 0$. Hence $\Theta_{r_{1}+s_{2}, s_{1}+r_{2}}\left(\widetilde{\chi} \cdot \chi_{V_{0,0}}\right) \neq 0$.
We write Proposition 3.11 (1) as

and (2) as

respectively. Note that in Proposition 3.11 (2), if $\chi=\operatorname{det}^{a}$ for some integer $a$, then $\widetilde{\chi}$ is the genuine character $\operatorname{det}^{a}$ of the $\operatorname{det}^{a}$-cover $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)$.
3.4. Equal rank case and almost equal rank case. To prove our main result, we use non-trivial results established by Paul in [P1] and [P3]. These are results on theta lifts in the equal rank case and the almost equal rank case. In these results, Paul considered the theta lifts from irreducible genuine representations of double covers of unitary groups. In this subsection, we recall Paul's results, and translate them into results of the theta lifts from irreducible representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$.

Recall that

$$
\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q) \cong\left\{(g, z) \in \mathrm{U}(p, q) \times \mathbb{C}^{1} \mid z^{2}=\operatorname{det}(g)^{\nu}\right\}
$$

where $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$ satisfies that $\nu \equiv m \bmod 2($ so that $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)$ depends not only on $(p, q)$ but also on $m$ mod 2$)$. It has a genuine character $\operatorname{det}^{\nu / 2}:(g, z) \mapsto z$. Hence

$$
\operatorname{Irr}_{\mathrm{disc}}(\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q))=\left\{\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-\nu / 2} \mid \pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\mathrm{disc}}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))\right\}
$$

Since $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ is characterized by its Harish-Chandra parameter $\mathrm{HC}(\pi)$, which is an element of $\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{p} \times\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{q}$ with $n=p+q$, the representation $\widetilde{\pi}=\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-\nu / 2}$ is characterized by its Harish-Chandra parameter

$$
\mathrm{HC}(\widetilde{\pi})=\mathrm{HC}(\pi)-\left(\frac{\nu}{2}, \ldots, \frac{\nu}{2} ; \frac{\nu}{2}, \ldots, \frac{\nu}{2}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n+m-1}{2}\right)^{p} \times\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{n+m-1}{2}\right)^{q} .
$$

First, we recall the result in the equal rank case ([P1]).
Theorem 3.12 ([P1, Theorems 0.1, 6.1 (a)]). Let $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)$ be the $\operatorname{det}^{(p+q) / 2}$-cover of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, and $\widetilde{\pi}$ be an irreducible tempered genuine representation of $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)$. Then there exists a unique pair $(r, s)$ such that $r+s=$ $p+q$ and $\Theta_{r, s}(\widetilde{\pi}) \neq 0$. Moreover, if $\widetilde{\pi}$ is a direct summand of induced representation

$$
\operatorname{Ind}_{\widetilde{P}}^{\widetilde{U}(p, q)}\left(\xi_{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \xi_{v} \otimes \widetilde{\pi}_{0}\right)
$$

where

- $\widetilde{P}$ is a parabolic subgroup of $\widetilde{\mathrm{U}}(p, q)$ with Levi subgroup of the form $\left(\mathbb{C}^{\times}\right)^{v} \times \widetilde{\mathrm{U}}\left(p_{0}, q_{0}\right)$ with $p=p_{0}+v$ and $q=q_{0}+v$;
- $\widetilde{\pi}_{0}$ is an irreducible genuine discrete series such that

$$
\mathrm{HC}\left(\widetilde{\pi}_{0}\right)=\left(a_{1}, \ldots, a_{x}, b_{1}, \ldots b_{y} ; c_{1}, \ldots, c_{z}, d_{1}, \ldots, d_{w}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{1}{2}\right)^{p_{0}} \times\left(\mathbb{Z}+\frac{1}{2}\right)^{q_{0}}
$$

with $a_{1}>\cdots>a_{x}>0>b_{1}>\cdots>b_{y}$ and $c_{1}>\cdots>c_{z}>0>d_{1}>\cdots>d_{w}$;

- $\xi_{1}, \ldots, \xi_{v}$ are unitary characters of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$,
then $r=x+w+v$ and $s=y+z+v$.
We translate this theorem in terms of $L$-parameters. Fix $m \bmod 2$. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in$ $\Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Write

$$
\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}+\left(\xi_{1}+\cdots+\xi_{v}\right)+\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1}+\cdots+{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right)
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv n+m-1 \bmod 2$ and $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{u}$;
- $\xi_{i}$ is a unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$(which can be of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ );
- $u+2 v=n$.

Then

$$
A_{\phi} \supset(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{V, 2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{V, 2 \alpha_{u}}
$$

where $\left\{e_{V, 2 \alpha_{1}}, \ldots, e_{V, 2 \alpha_{u}}\right\}$ is the canonical basis associated to $\left\{\chi_{V} \chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}, \ldots, \chi_{V} \chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}\right\}$.
The following theorem is a translation of Theorem 3.12.
Theorem 3.13. Suppose that $m=n=p+q$. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be as above, and set $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. Then there exists a unique pair $(r, s)$ such that $r+s=p+q$ and $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$. Moreover $(r, s)$ is given by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}>0\right\}+v, \\
s=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}<0\right\}+v
\end{array}\right.
$$

Similarly, we can translate the result in the almost equal rank case ([P3]).
Theorem 3.14. Suppose that $m \equiv n+1 \bmod 2$. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be as above, and set $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$.
(1) Suppose that $\phi$ does not contain $\chi_{V}$. Then there exist exactly two pairs $(r, s)$ such that $r+s=p+q+1$ and $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$. Moreover these two pairs of $(r, s)$ are given by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}>0\right\}+v+1, \\
s=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}<0\right\}+v
\end{array}\right.
$$

and

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}>0\right\}+v, \\
s=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}<0\right\}+v+1 .
\end{array}\right.
$$

(2) Suppose that $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V}$ with odd multiplicity. Then there exists a unique pair $(r, s)$ such that $r+s=p+q-1$ and $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$. Moreover $(r, s)$ is given by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}>0\right\}+v \\
s=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}<0\right\}+v
\end{array}\right.
$$

(3) Suppose that $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V}$ with even multiplicity. Then there exists a unique pair $(r, s)$ such that $r+s=p+q-1$ and $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$. Moreover $(r, s)$ is given by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}>0\right\}+v-1, \\
s=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}<0\right\}+v
\end{array}\right.
$$

or

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}>0\right\}+v \\
s=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}<0\right\}+v-1
\end{array}\right.
$$

In fact, Paul ([P3, Theorem 3.4]) has determined $(r, s)$ in Theorem 3.14 (3) exactly in terms of a system of positive roots.

## 4. The definition and the main result

Through this and next sections, we fix $\kappa \in\{1,2\}$ and choose a character $\chi_{V}$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$such that $\chi_{V} \mid \mathbb{R}^{\times}=$ $\operatorname{sgn}^{\kappa+n}$. We will only consider theta lifting $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi)$ of $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ with $p+q \equiv n$ mod 2 and $r+s \equiv n+\kappa \bmod 2$. In this section, we state the main result and its corollary.
4.1. Definition. Before stating the main result, we define some notations.

Definition 4.1. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$.
(1) Consider the set $\mathcal{T}$ containing $\kappa-2$ and all integers $k>0$ with $k \equiv \kappa \bmod 2$ satisfying the following conditions:
(chain condition): $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V} \chi_{k-1}+\chi_{V} \chi_{k-3}+\cdots+\chi_{V} \chi_{-k+1}$;
(odd-ness condition): the multiplicity of $\chi_{V} \chi_{k+1-2 i}$ in $\phi$ is odd for $i=1, \ldots, k$;
(alternating condition): $\eta\left(e_{V, k+1-2 i}\right)=-\eta\left(e_{V, k-1-2 i}\right)$ for $i=1, \ldots, k-1$.
Here, $e_{V, 2 \alpha}$ is the element in $A_{\phi}$ corresponding to $\chi_{V} \chi_{2 \alpha}$. Set

$$
k_{\lambda}=\max \mathcal{T}
$$

(2) Write

$$
\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}+\left(\xi_{1}+\cdots+\xi_{v}\right)+\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1}+\cdots+{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right)
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv \kappa-1 \bmod 2$ and $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{u}$;
- $\xi_{j}$ is a unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$(which can be of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ );
- $u+2 v=n$.

Then $A_{\phi} \supset(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{V, 2 \alpha_{1}}+\cdots+(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{V, 2 \alpha_{u}}$. Define $\left(r_{\lambda}, s_{\lambda}\right)$ by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r_{\lambda}=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\}| | \alpha_{i} \mid \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2,(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}>0\right\}+v \\
s_{\lambda}=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\}| | \alpha_{i} \mid \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2,(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, \alpha_{i}}\right) \alpha_{i}<0\right\}+v
\end{array}\right.
$$

(3) Write

$$
\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}=m_{1} \chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}+\cdots+m_{u} \chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}+m_{1}^{\prime} \chi_{2 \alpha_{1}^{\prime}}+\cdots+m_{u^{\prime}}^{\prime} \chi_{2 \alpha_{u^{\prime}}^{\prime}}+\left(\xi_{1}+\cdots+\xi_{v}\right)+\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1}+\cdots+{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right)
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv 2 \alpha_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime} \equiv \kappa-1 \bmod 2, \alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{u}, \alpha_{1}^{\prime}>\cdots>\alpha_{u^{\prime}}^{\prime}$ and $\left\{\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{u}\right\} \cap\left\{\alpha_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \alpha_{u^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right\}=\emptyset ;$
- $m_{i} \geq 1$ (resp. $m_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime} \geq 1$ ) is the multiplicity of $\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}$ (resp. $\chi_{2 \alpha_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime}}$ ) in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ such that $m_{i}$ is odd (resp. $m_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime}$ is even);
- $\xi_{j}$ is a unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$which is not of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ with $2 \alpha \equiv \kappa-1 \bmod 2$;
- $\left(m_{1}+\cdots+m_{u}\right)+\left(m_{1}^{\prime}+\cdots+m_{u^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right)+2 v=n$.

Define a subset $X_{\lambda}$ of $\frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z} \times\{ \pm 1\}$ by

$$
\begin{aligned}
X_{\lambda}= & \left\{\left(\alpha_{i},(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{i}}\right)\right) \mid i=1, \ldots, u\right\} \\
& \cup\left\{\left(\alpha_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime},+1\right),\left(\alpha_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime},-1\right) \mid i^{\prime}=1, \ldots, u^{\prime}, \eta\left(e_{V, \alpha_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime}}\right) \neq(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>\alpha_{i^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right\}}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

(4) We define a sequence $X_{\lambda}=X_{\lambda}^{(0)} \supset X_{\lambda}^{(1)} \supset \cdots \supset X_{\lambda}^{(n)} \supset \cdots$ as follows: Let $\left\{\beta_{1}, \ldots, \beta_{u_{j}}\right\}$ be the image of $X_{\lambda}^{(j)}$ under the projection $\frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z} \times\{ \pm 1\} \rightarrow \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\beta_{1}>\cdots>\beta_{u_{j}}$. Set $S_{j}$ to be the set of $i \in\left\{2, \ldots, u_{j}\right\}$ such that

- $\left(\beta_{i-1},+1\right),\left(\beta_{i},-1\right) \in X_{\lambda}^{(j)}$;
- $\min \left\{\left|\beta_{i-1}\right|,\left|\beta_{i}\right|\right\} \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2$;
- $\beta_{i-1} \beta_{i} \geq 0$.

Then we define a subset $X_{\lambda}^{(j+1)}$ of $X_{\lambda}^{(j)}$ by

$$
X_{\lambda}^{(j+1)}=X_{\lambda}^{(j)} \backslash\left(\bigcup_{i \in S_{j}}\left\{\left(\beta_{i-1},+1\right),\left(\beta_{i},-1\right)\right\}\right)
$$

Finally, we set $X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=X_{\lambda}^{(n)}=X_{\lambda}^{(n+1)}$.
(5) For an integer $T$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, we define a set $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$ by

$$
\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)=\left\{(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)} \left\lvert\, 0 \leq \epsilon \alpha+\frac{k_{\lambda}-1}{2}<T\right.\right\}
$$

In particular, if $T \leq 0$, then $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)=\emptyset$.
4.2. Main result. The main result is the following:

Theorem 4.2. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Set $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. Let $r=r_{\lambda}, s=s_{\lambda}$ and $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$ be as in Definition 4.1.
(1) Suppose that $k_{\lambda}=-1$. Then for integers $l$ and $t \geq 1$, the theta lift $\Theta_{r+2 t+l+1, s+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if

$$
l \geq 0 \quad \text { and } \quad \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l \quad \text { for each } \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}
$$

Moreover, for an integer $l$, the theta lift $\Theta_{r+l+1, s+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if

$$
\begin{cases}l \geq 0 & \text { if } \phi \text { does not contain } \chi_{V}, \\ l \geq-1 & \text { if } \phi \text { contains } \chi_{V} \text { and both }(0,1) \text { and }(0,-1) \text { are not in } X_{\lambda}, \\ l \geq 1 & \text { if } \phi \text { contains } \chi_{V} \text { and both }(0,1) \text { and }(0,-1) \text { are in } X_{\lambda} .\end{cases}
$$

(2) Suppose that $k_{\lambda} \geq 0$. Then for integers $l$ and $t \geq 1$, the theta lift $\Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if

$$
l \geq k_{\lambda} \quad \text { and } \quad \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l \quad \text { for each } \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}
$$

Moreover, we consider the following three conditions:
(chain condition 2): $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ contains both $\chi_{k+1}$ and $\chi_{-(k+1)}$, so that

$$
\phi \chi_{V}^{-1} \supset \underbrace{\chi_{k+1}+\chi_{k-1}+\cdots+\chi_{-(k-1)}+\chi_{-(k+1)}}_{k+2} ;
$$

(even-ness condition): at least one of $\chi_{k+1}$ and $\chi_{-(k+1)}$ is contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with even multiplicity;
(alternating condition 2): $\eta\left(e_{V, k+1-2 i}\right) \neq \eta\left(e_{V, k-1-2 i}\right)$ for $i=0, \ldots, k$.
Then for an integer $l$, the theta lift $\Theta_{r+l, s+l}(\pi)$ is nonzero if and only if

$$
\begin{cases}l \geq-1 & \text { if } \lambda=(\phi, \eta) \text { satisfies the three conditions, } \\ l \geq 0 & \text { otherwise. }\end{cases}
$$

Remark 4.3. (1) When $\phi \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, we need the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture only for discrete series representations. Since He $[\mathrm{He} 2]$ has established the conjecture in this case, the statements in Theorem 4.2 for discrete series representations hold unconditionally.
(2) If $\phi \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, then $\pi$ is a discrete series representation of some $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. By Theorem 2.1 (4), we can translate Definition 4.1 and Theorem 4.2 in terms of Harish-Chandra parameters, and we obtain Definition 1.6 and Theorem 1.7.
(3) When $\phi \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $t=0,1$, Theorem 4.2 is a translation of results of Paul ( P 2 , Proposition 3.4, Theorem 3.14]).
(4) When $\pi$ is a representation of a compact unitary group and $l=0$, Theorem 4.2 is compatible with results of $[\mathrm{KV}]$ and $[\mathrm{Li}]$ (see also [A, Proposition 6.6]).
(5) When $k_{\lambda}=-1$, by Definition 4.1, $\chi_{V}$ appears in $\phi$ with even multiplicity. Hence $(0,1)$ and $(0,-1)$ are both in $X_{\lambda}$ or both not in $X_{\lambda}$. In the former case (resp. in the latter case), we write $(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}$ (resp. $\left.(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}\right)$.
By Proposition 3.9 together with the following lemma, we can obtain the first occurrence index of any Witt tower of theta lifts of any irreducible tempered representation $\pi$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$.
Lemma 4.4. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ as in Definition 4.1, and set $\lambda^{\vee}=\left(\phi^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{V}^{2}, \eta^{\vee}\right)$.
(1) We have $k_{\lambda \vee}=k_{\lambda}$ and $\left(r_{\lambda \vee}, s_{\lambda \vee}\right)=\left(s_{\lambda}, r_{\lambda}\right)$.
(2) Suppose that $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ is contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with odd multiplicity. Then $(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$ if and only if $(-\alpha, \epsilon) \in$ $X_{\lambda \vee}$.
(3) Suppose that $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ is contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with even multiplicity (possibly zero). Then $(\alpha, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}$ if and only if $(-\alpha, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}$.
(4) In general, if $(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$, then $(-\alpha,-\epsilon) \notin X_{\lambda^{\vee}}$.

Proof. Write

$$
\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}+\left(\xi_{1}+\cdots+\xi_{v}\right)+\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1}+\cdots+{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right)
$$

as in Definition 4.1 (2). Then

$$
\phi^{\vee} \chi_{V}=\chi_{-2 \alpha_{u}}+\cdots+\chi_{-2 \alpha_{1}}+\left(\xi_{1}^{-1}+\cdots+\xi_{v}^{-1}\right)+\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}+\cdots+{ }^{c} \xi_{v}\right)
$$

Suppose that $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ is contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with odd multiplicity. This means that $\alpha=\alpha_{i}$ for some $i$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda} & \Longleftrightarrow(-1)^{i-1} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha}\right)=\epsilon \\
& \Longleftrightarrow(-1)^{u-i} \eta^{\vee}\left(e_{V,-2 \alpha}\right)=\epsilon \Longleftrightarrow(-\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda \vee}
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence we have (2). This easily implies that $k_{\lambda \vee}=k_{\lambda}$ and $\left(r_{\lambda \vee}, s_{\lambda \vee}\right)=\left(s_{\lambda}, r_{\lambda}\right)$. Hence we have (1).
Now suppose that $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ is contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with even multiplicity. Then

$$
(\alpha, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda} \Longleftrightarrow \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>\alpha\right\}+1},
$$

HIRAKU ATOBE

$$
\Longleftrightarrow \eta^{\vee}\left(e_{V,-2 \alpha}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid-\alpha_{i}>-\alpha\right\}} \Longleftrightarrow(-\alpha, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda^{\vee}} .
$$

Hence we have (3). The assertion (4) follows from (2) and (3).
4.3. A corollary. As a consequence of Theorem 4.2, we obtain a new relation between theta lifts and induced representations.

Corollary 4.5. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Let $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ and $\pi_{0} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p-1, q-1))$. Suppose that there exists a unitary character $\xi$ such that

$$
\pi \subset \operatorname{Ind}_{P}^{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\xi \otimes \pi_{0}\right)
$$

where $P$ is a parabolic subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with Levi subgroup $M_{P}=\mathbb{C}^{\times} \times \mathrm{U}(p-1, q-1)$. For $(r$, $s)$, we have the following:
(1) Suppose that $\Theta_{r-1, s-1}\left(\pi_{0}\right) \neq 0$. If $r+s \leq p+q$, then $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$.
(2) Suppose that $\Theta_{r, s}(\pi) \neq 0$. If $r+s \geq p+q+1$, then $\Theta_{r-1, s-1}\left(\pi_{0}\right) \neq 0$. In general, $\Theta_{r, s}\left(\pi_{0}\right) \neq 0$.

Proof. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ and $\lambda_{0}=\left(\phi_{0}, \eta_{0}\right)$ be the $L$-parameters of $\pi$ and $\pi_{0}$, respectively. By Theorem 2.1 (5), we have $\phi=\phi_{0}+\xi+{ }^{c} \xi^{-1}$ and $\eta \mid A_{\phi_{0}}=\eta_{0}$. In particular, we see that $k_{\lambda}=k_{\lambda_{0}},\left(r_{\lambda}, s_{\lambda}\right)=\left(r_{\lambda_{0}}+1, s_{\lambda_{0}}+1\right)$ and $X_{\lambda_{0}} \subset X_{\lambda}$.

We show (1). By Theorem 4.2, if $\Theta_{r-1, s-1}\left(\pi_{0}\right) \neq 0$ and $r+s \leq p+q$, then $\left|(r-s)-\left(r_{\lambda_{0}}-s_{\lambda_{0}}\right)\right| \leq 1$. Hence (1) follows from the last assertions of Theorem 4.2 (1) and (2).

We show (2). To prove the first part, it suffices to show that $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$ for any $T$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$. If $X_{\lambda_{0}}=X_{\lambda}$, it is clear that $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{\epsilon}(T)=\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$ for any $T$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$. Hence we may assume that $\xi=\chi_{V} \chi_{2 \alpha}$ and $(\alpha, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda} \backslash X_{\lambda_{0}}$. First, we assume that $\alpha \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2$. Then $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{-}(T)=\mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{-}(T)$ for any $T$. We note that

$$
\#\left\{\left(\alpha_{0},+1\right) \in X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)} \mid\left(\alpha_{0},+1\right) \notin X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}\right\} \leq 1
$$

If $X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)} \subset X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}$, then $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{+}(T) \subset \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(T)$. Suppose that $\left(\alpha_{0},+1\right) \in X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)}$ but $\left(\alpha_{0},+1\right) \notin X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}$. Then one of the following holds:

- $X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=\left(X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)} \backslash\left\{\left(\alpha_{0},+1\right)\right\}\right) \cup\left\{\left(\alpha^{\prime},+1\right)\right\}$ for some $\left(\alpha^{\prime},+1\right) \notin X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)}$ with $\alpha^{\prime} \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2$;
- $X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)} \backslash\left\{\left(\alpha_{0},+1\right),\left(\alpha^{\prime},-1\right)\right\}$ for some $\left(\alpha^{\prime},-1\right) \in X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)}$ with $\alpha^{\prime} \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2$.

In both of two cases, we must have $\alpha^{\prime}<\alpha_{0}$. However, in the second case, $X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)}$ contains both $\left(\alpha_{0},+1\right)$ and $\left(\alpha^{\prime},-1\right)$ with $\alpha_{0}>\alpha^{\prime} \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2$. This contradicts the definition of $X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)}$ (see Definition 4.1 (4)). Hence we must have $X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}=\left(X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)} \backslash\left\{\left(\alpha_{0},+1\right)\right\}\right) \cup\left\{\left(\alpha^{\prime},+1\right)\right\}$ for some $\left(\alpha^{\prime},+1\right) \notin X_{\lambda_{0}}^{(\infty)}$ with $\alpha_{0}>\alpha^{\prime} \geq\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2$. Then we have

$$
\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(T)= \begin{cases}\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{+}(T)+1 & \text { if } \alpha^{\prime}-\frac{k_{\lambda}-1}{2}<T \leq \alpha_{0}-\frac{k_{\lambda}-1}{2} \\ \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{+}(T) & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Therefore in any case, we have

$$
\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{+}(T) \leq \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(T)
$$

Similarly, if $\alpha \leq-\left(k_{\lambda}+1\right) / 2$, then $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(T)=\mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{+}(T)$ and $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda_{0}}^{-}(T) \leq \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{-}(T)$ for any $T$. Hence we have the first part of (2). The last part follows from the last assertions of Theorem 4.2 (1) and (2).

Remark 4.6. A non-archimedean analogue also holds (see Theorem 1.12). In the non-archimedean case, the part (2) is a corollary of Kudla's filtration [Ku1], whereas, in the archimedean case, it would not follow from the induction principle ([P1, Theorem 4.5.5]).

## 5. Proof of Theorem 4.2

In this section, we shall prove Theorem 4.2. In $\S 5.2$, we show the sufficient conditions of the non-vanishing of theta lifts in Theorem 4.2 (1), (2) when $t \geq 1$. The proof is an induction using a seesaw identity (Proposition $3.11(1))$. To use such a seesaw identity, for given $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ ), we have to find a "good" representation $\pi^{\prime}$ of $\mathrm{U}(p+1, q)$ such that $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$. To do this, we use the Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2) in $\S 5.1$. The necessary conditions of the non-vanishing of theta lifts in Theorem 4.2 (1), (2) when $t \geq 1$ are proven in $\S 5.3$. For the proof, we use a seesaw identity (Proposition 3.11 (2)) and Proposition 3.10. Finally, using the conservation relation (Theorem 3.7), we show Theorem 4.2 (1), (2) when $t=0$ in §5.4.
5.1. Finding a GGP pair. A main tool in the proof of the main result is a seesaw identity (Proposition 3.11 (1)). To use it, in this subsection, for given $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$, we find a "good" representation $\pi^{\prime}$ of $\mathrm{U}(p+1, q)$ such that $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$.

For a pair $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$, let $k_{\lambda}, r_{\lambda}, s_{\lambda}$ and $X_{\lambda}$ be as in Definition 4.1. Consider a representation $\phi_{0}^{\prime \prime}$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$defined so that

$$
\phi_{0}^{\prime \prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}=\bigoplus_{(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}} \chi_{2 \alpha-\epsilon}
$$

Note that $\operatorname{dim}\left(\phi_{0}^{\prime \prime}\right) \equiv n \bmod 2$. For each $\beta \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ with $2 \beta \equiv \kappa \bmod 2$, the multiplicity of $\chi_{2 \beta}$ in $\phi_{0}^{\prime \prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}$ is at most 2. Moreover, it is equal to 2 if and only if both $(\beta+1 / 2,+1)$ and $(\beta-1 / 2,-1)$ are contained in $X_{\lambda}$. Define a representation $\phi_{0}^{\prime}$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$so that

$$
\phi_{0}^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}=\phi_{0}^{\prime \prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}-\bigoplus\left\{2 \chi_{2 \beta} \mid(\beta+1 / 2,+1),(\beta-1 / 2,-1) \in X_{\lambda}\right\}
$$

Then $\phi_{0}^{\prime}$ is multiplicity-free and $\operatorname{dim}\left(\phi_{0}^{\prime}\right) \equiv n \bmod 2$. Put $v^{\prime}=\left(n-\operatorname{dim}\left(\phi_{0}^{\prime}\right)\right) / 2$.
In this subsection, we choose arbitrary half integers $\beta_{0}, \beta_{1}, \ldots$ such that $2 \beta_{j} \equiv \kappa \bmod 2$ and

$$
\max \left\{\alpha_{1}+1,0\right\}<\beta_{0}<\beta_{1}<\cdots
$$

Here, when $u=0$ so that $\alpha_{1}$ does not appear, we understand that $\max \left\{\alpha_{1}+1,0\right\}=0$.
To use a seesaw identity (Proposition 3.11 (1)), we need the following lemmas.
Lemma 5.1. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Suppose that $k_{\lambda}=-1$. Set

$$
\phi^{\prime}=\phi_{0}^{\prime}+\chi_{V}\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{0}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \beta_{2 v^{\prime}}}\right) \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)
$$

We define $\eta^{\prime} \in \widehat{A_{\phi^{\prime}}}$ by setting $\eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V, 2 \beta_{j}}\right)=1$ for $j=0,1, \ldots, 2 v^{\prime}$, and

$$
\eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V, 2 \beta}\right)=-\eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha}\right)
$$

when $\beta=\alpha-\epsilon / 2$ with $(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$. Let $\lambda^{\prime}=\left(\phi^{\prime}, \eta^{\prime}\right)$ and $\pi^{\prime}=\pi\left(\phi^{\prime}, \eta^{\prime}\right)$. Then

- $\pi^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}(\mathrm{U}(p+1, q))$ and $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$;
- $k_{\lambda^{\prime}}=0$ and

$$
\left(r_{\lambda^{\prime}}, s_{\lambda^{\prime}}\right)= \begin{cases}\left(r_{\lambda}, s_{\lambda}+1\right) & \text { if }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda} \\ \left(r_{\lambda}+1, s_{\lambda}\right) & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

- for $T \leq \beta_{0}-1 / 2$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, the $\operatorname{map}(\beta, \epsilon) \mapsto(\beta+\epsilon / 2, \epsilon)$ gives an injection

$$
\mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)
$$

- for fixed $l \geq 0$ and $1 \leq T \leq \beta_{0}-1 / 2$, if $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq l$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, then $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq l$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$.
Lemma 5.2. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Suppose that $k_{\lambda}=0$. Put

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \alpha_{+}=\min \left\{\alpha \mid \alpha>0 \text { and } \exists \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\} \text { s.t. }(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}\right\}, \\
& \alpha_{-}=\max \left\{\alpha \mid \alpha<0 \text { and } \exists \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\} \text { s.t. }(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We consider the following cases separately:
Case 1: Both $(1 / 2,+1)$ and $(-1 / 2,-1)$ are not contained in $X_{\lambda}$.
Case 2: Both $(1 / 2,+1)$ and $(-1 / 2,-1)$ are contained in $X_{\lambda}$.
Case 3: There is $\delta \in\{ \pm 1\}$ such that

$$
\alpha_{\delta}=\delta / 2, \quad\left(\alpha_{\delta}, \delta\right) \in X_{\lambda} \quad \text { and } \quad \alpha_{-\delta} \neq-\delta / 2, \quad\left(\alpha_{-\delta},-\delta\right) \in X_{\lambda}
$$

Case 4: There is $\delta \in\{ \pm 1\}$ such that

$$
\alpha_{\delta}=\delta / 2, \quad\left(\alpha_{\delta}, \delta\right) \in X_{\lambda} \quad \text { and } \quad \alpha_{-\delta} \neq-\delta / 2, \quad\left(\alpha_{-\delta},-\delta\right) \notin X_{\lambda}
$$

Case 5: There is $\delta \in\{ \pm 1\}$ such that

$$
\alpha_{\delta}=\delta / 2, \quad\left(\alpha_{\delta}, \delta\right) \in X_{\lambda} \quad \text { and } \quad \alpha_{-\delta}=-\delta / 2, \quad\left(\alpha_{-\delta},-\delta\right) \notin X_{\lambda}
$$

The case 5 cannot occur if $\phi \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$. We set $\phi^{\prime} \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ so that

$$
\phi^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}= \begin{cases}\phi_{0}^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}+\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{0}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \beta_{2 v^{\prime}}}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 1,2 \text { or } 5, \\ \phi_{0}^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}-\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{+}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{-}}\right)+\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{0}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \beta_{2 v^{\prime}+2}}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 3, \\ \phi_{0}^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}-1+\chi_{-2 \delta}+\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{0}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \beta_{2 v^{\prime}}}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 4 .\end{cases}
$$

Here, in the case 3, we put $\beta_{ \pm}=\alpha_{ \pm} \mp 1 / 2$. Also we define $\eta^{\prime} \in \widehat{A_{\phi^{\prime}}}$ by setting $\eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V, 2 \beta_{j}}\right)=1$ for $j=0,1, \ldots$, and

$$
\eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V, 2 \beta}\right)=-\eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha}\right)
$$

when $\beta=\alpha-\epsilon / 2$ with $(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$. In the case 4 , we set $\eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V,-2 \delta}\right)=-\eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha_{\delta}}\right)$. Let $\lambda^{\prime}=\left(\phi^{\prime}, \eta^{\prime}\right)$ and $\pi^{\prime}=\pi\left(\phi^{\prime}, \eta^{\prime}\right)$. Then

- $\pi^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}(\mathrm{U}(p+1, q))$ and $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$;
- $k_{\lambda^{\prime}}$ and $\left(r_{\lambda^{\prime}}, s_{\lambda^{\prime}}\right)$ are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
k_{\lambda^{\prime}} & = \begin{cases}-1 & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 1,2,3 \text { or } 4, \\
1 & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 5,\end{cases} \\
\left(r_{\lambda^{\prime}}, s_{\lambda^{\prime}}\right) & = \begin{cases}\left(r_{\lambda}+1, s_{\lambda}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 1, \\
\left(r_{\lambda}, s_{\lambda}+1\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 2,3 \text { or } 4, \\
\left(r_{\lambda}, s_{\lambda}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 5 ;\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

- for $T \leq \beta_{0}$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, the map $(\beta, \epsilon) \mapsto(\beta+\epsilon / 2, \epsilon)$ gives an injection
- for fixed $l \geq 0$ and $1 \leq T \leq \beta_{0}$, if $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq l$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, then

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T-1) \leq l & & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 1, \\
\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T-1) \leq l-1 & & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 2,3 \text { or } 4, \\
\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq l & & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 5
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$.
Lemma 5.3. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Suppose that $k=k_{\lambda}>0$. Put

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \alpha_{+}=\min \left\{\alpha \left\lvert\, \alpha>\frac{k-1}{2}\right. \text { and } \exists \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\} \text { s.t. }(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}\right\}, \\
& \alpha_{-}=\max \left\{\alpha \left\lvert\, \alpha<-\frac{k-1}{2}\right. \text { and } \exists \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\} \text { s.t. }(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

There is unique $\delta \in\{ \pm 1\}$ such that $((k-1) / 2, \delta), \ldots,((-k+1) / 2, \delta) \in X_{\lambda}$. We consider the following cases separately.

Case 1: $\alpha_{\delta} \neq(k+1) \delta / 2$ or $\left(\alpha_{\delta}, \delta\right) \notin X_{\lambda}$.
Case 2: $\alpha_{\delta}=(k+1) \delta / 2,\left(\alpha_{\delta}, \delta\right) \in X_{\lambda}$ and $\alpha_{-\delta}=-(k+1) \delta / 2,\left(\alpha_{-\delta},-\delta\right) \in X_{\lambda}$.
Case 3: $\alpha_{\delta}=(k+1) \delta / 2,\left(\alpha_{\delta}, \delta\right) \in X_{\lambda}$ and $\alpha_{-\delta} \neq-(k+1) \delta / 2,\left(\alpha_{-\delta},-\delta\right) \in X_{\lambda}$.
Case 4: $\alpha_{\delta}=(k+1) \delta / 2,\left(\alpha_{\delta}, \delta\right) \in X_{\lambda}$ and $\alpha_{-\delta} \neq-(k+1) \delta / 2,\left(\alpha_{-\delta},-\delta\right) \notin X_{\lambda}$.
Case 5: $\alpha_{\delta}=(k+1) \delta / 2,\left(\alpha_{\delta}, \delta\right) \in X_{\lambda}$ and $\alpha_{-\delta}=-(k+1) \delta / 2,\left(\alpha_{-\delta},-\delta\right) \notin X_{\lambda}$.
The case 5 cannot occur if $\phi \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$. We set $\phi^{\prime} \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ so that

$$
\phi^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}= \begin{cases}\phi_{0}^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}+\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{0}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \beta_{2 v^{\prime}}}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 1,2 \text { or } 5, \\ \phi_{0}^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}-\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{+}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{-}}\right)+\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{0}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \beta_{2 v^{\prime}+2}}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 3, \\ \phi_{0}^{\prime} \chi_{V}^{-1}-\chi_{-k \delta}+\chi_{V} \chi_{-(k+2) \delta}+\left(\chi_{2 \beta_{0}}+\chi_{2 \beta_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \beta_{2 v^{\prime}}}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 4 .\end{cases}
$$

Here, in the case 3 , we put $\beta_{\delta}=-k \delta / 2$ and $\beta_{-\delta}=\alpha_{-\delta}+\delta / 2$. Also we define $\eta^{\prime} \in \widehat{A_{\phi^{\prime}}}$ by setting $\eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V, 2 \beta_{j}}\right)=1$ for $j=0,1, \ldots$, and

$$
\eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V, 2 \beta}\right)=-\eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha}\right)
$$

when $\beta=\alpha-\epsilon / 2$ with $(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$. In the case 4 , we set $\eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V,-(k+2) \delta}\right)=-\eta\left(e_{V,-(k-1) \delta}\right)$. Let $\lambda^{\prime}=\left(\phi^{\prime}, \eta^{\prime}\right)$ and $\pi^{\prime}=\pi\left(\phi^{\prime}, \eta^{\prime}\right)$. Then

- $\pi^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}(\mathrm{U}(p+1, q))$ and $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$;
- $k_{\lambda^{\prime}}$ and $\left(r_{\lambda^{\prime}}, s_{\lambda^{\prime}}\right)$ are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
k_{\lambda^{\prime}} & = \begin{cases}k-1 & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 1,2,3 \text { or } 4, \\
k+1 & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 5,\end{cases} \\
\left(r_{\lambda^{\prime}}, s_{\lambda^{\prime}}\right) & = \begin{cases}\left(r_{\lambda}+1, s_{\lambda}+1\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 1,2,3 \text { or } 4, \\
\left(r_{\lambda}, s_{\lambda}\right) & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 5 ;\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

- for $T \leq \beta_{0}+k / 2$ and $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, the $\operatorname{map}(\beta, \epsilon) \mapsto(\beta+\epsilon / 2, \epsilon)$ gives an injection
- for fixed $l \geq 0$ and $1 \leq T \leq \beta_{0}+k / 2$, if $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq l$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, then

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T-1) \leq l-1 & & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 1,2,3 \text { or } 4, \\
\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq l & & \text { if } \lambda \text { is in case } 5
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$.
The proofs of Lemmas 5.1, 5.2 and 5.3 are straightforward and similar to each other. So we only prove Lemma 5.1.

Proof of Lemma 5.1. We check the conditions in Proposition 2.3. Write

$$
\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}+\left(\xi_{1}+\cdots+\xi_{v}\right)+\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1}+\cdots+{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right)
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv \kappa-1 \bmod 2$ and $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{u}$;
- $\xi_{i}$ is a unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$(which can be of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ );
- $u+2 v=n$.

Fix $\alpha$ such that $\chi_{V} \chi_{2 \alpha} \subset \phi$. Then

$$
\#\left\{\beta \mid \chi_{V} \chi_{2 \beta} \subset \phi^{\prime}, \beta<\alpha\right\} \equiv\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}<\alpha\right\}+1 & \bmod 2 & \text { if }(\alpha,+1) \in X_{\lambda} \\
\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}<\alpha\right\} & \bmod 2 & \text { otherwise }
\end{array}\right.
$$

This implies that

$$
(-1)^{\#\left\{\beta \mid \chi_{V} \chi_{2 \beta} \subset \phi^{\prime}, \beta<\alpha\right\}}=(-1)^{n} \eta\left(e_{V, 2 \alpha}\right) .
$$

Similarly, for each $\beta$ such that $\beta \neq \beta_{j}$ and $\chi_{V} \chi_{2 \beta} \subset \phi^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}<\beta\right\} \\
& \equiv\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}<\beta+1 / 2\right\}+1 & \bmod 2 & \text { if }(\beta,-1) \in X_{\lambda^{\prime}},(\beta-1 / 2,+1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\
\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}<\beta-1 / 2\right\} & \bmod 2 & \text { otherwise. }
\end{array}\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

so that

$$
(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}<\beta\right\}}=(-1)^{n} \eta^{\prime}\left(e_{V, 2 \beta}\right)
$$

This equation also holds when $\beta=\beta_{j}$ for $j=0,1, \ldots, 2 v^{\prime}$. By the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2 and Proposition 2.3), we conclude that $\pi^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}(\mathrm{U}(p+1, q))$ and $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$.

By the construction, if $X_{\lambda^{\prime}}$ contains $(1 / 2,-1)$ (resp. $(-1 / 2,+1)$ ), then $X_{\lambda}$ must contain $(0,-1)($ resp. $(0,+1))$. Since $k_{\lambda}=-1$, in this case, we must have $(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}$, so that $X_{\lambda^{\prime}}$ cannot contain $(-1 / 2,-1)($ resp. $(1 / 2,+1))$. Hence $k_{\lambda^{\prime}}=0$. Note that for $(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$ with $\alpha \neq 0$,

$$
\epsilon \alpha>0 \Longleftrightarrow \epsilon\left(\alpha-\frac{\epsilon}{2}\right)>0 .
$$

This implies that when $(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}$, we have $\left(r_{\lambda^{\prime}}, s_{\lambda^{\prime}}\right)=\left(r_{\lambda}+1, s_{\lambda}\right)$. If $(\beta, \epsilon)=( \pm 1 / 2, \mp 1)$, then $\epsilon \beta<0$. This implies that when $(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}$, we have $\left(r_{\lambda^{\prime}}, s_{\lambda^{\prime}}\right)=\left(r_{\lambda}, s_{\lambda}+1\right)$.

Finally, by definition, we have

$$
X_{\lambda^{\prime}} \subset\left\{\left(\beta_{j},(-1)^{j}\right) \mid j=0, \ldots, 2 v^{\prime}\right\} \cup\left\{(\beta, \epsilon) \mid(\beta+\epsilon / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}\right\}
$$

Moreover, by construction of $\lambda^{\prime}$, we see that if $(\beta, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{(\infty)}$ with $\beta \neq \beta_{0}$, then $(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}$ with $\alpha=\beta+\epsilon / 2$. In this case,

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 \leq \epsilon \beta-\frac{1}{2}<T & \Longleftrightarrow 0 \leq \epsilon\left(\alpha-\frac{\epsilon}{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2}<T \\
& \Longleftrightarrow 0 \leq \epsilon \alpha-1<T .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence if $(\beta, \epsilon) \in \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T)$ with $\beta \neq \beta_{0}$, then $(\alpha, \epsilon) \in \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$ with $\alpha=\beta+\epsilon / 2$. When $T<\beta_{0}$, we see that $\left(\beta_{0},+1\right)$ is not contained in $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T)$, so that we may consider the map

$$
\mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T) \rightarrow \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T), \quad(\beta, \epsilon) \mapsto\left(\beta+\frac{\epsilon}{2}, \epsilon\right) .
$$

This map is clearly injective. Hence we have $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(T) \leq \# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$. This completes the proof of Lemma 5.1.
5.2. Non-vanishing. In this subsection, we prove sufficient conditions of the non-vanishing of theta lifts in Theorem 4.2.

Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Set $r=r_{\lambda}, s=s_{\lambda}$, and $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. For non-negative integers $t$ and $l$, consider the following statements:
$(S)_{-1, t, l}$ : Suppose that $k_{\lambda}=-1$. If $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, then

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{r+2 t+l+1, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\ \Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l+1}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
$$

$(S)_{k, t, l}:$ Suppose that $k_{\lambda}=k \geq 0$ and $l \geq k$. If $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, then $\Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0$.
First, we consider these statements for the discrete series representations. We have implications.
Proposition 5.4. Consider the statement $(S)_{k, t, l}$ only when $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$.
(1) For $t \geq 0$ and $l \geq 0$, we have $(S)_{0, t, l} \Rightarrow(S)_{-1, t, l}$.
(2) For $t \geq 1$ and $l \geq 0$, we have $(S)_{-1, t-1, l}+(S)_{-1, t, l-1} \Rightarrow(S)_{0, t, l}$.
(3) For $t \geq 0$ and $l \geq k>0$, we have $(S)_{k-1, t, l-1} \Rightarrow(S)_{k, t, l}$.

Here, we interpret $(S)_{k, t,-1}$ to be empty.

Proof. Suppose that $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ is a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Let $\lambda^{\prime}=\left(\phi^{\prime}, \eta^{\prime}\right)$ be as in Lemma 5.1, 5.2 or 5.3. Here, we take $\beta_{0}$ so that $\beta_{0}+k_{\lambda} / 2 \geq t+l$. Since $\phi \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\phi^{\prime} \in$ $\Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n+1}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture for $\phi$ and $\phi^{\prime}$ has been established by He [He2]. So we have $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$ unconditionally.

We show (1). Suppose that $k_{\lambda}=-1$. By Lemma 5.1, we have $k_{\lambda^{\prime}}=0,\left(r_{\lambda^{\prime}}, s_{\lambda^{\prime}}\right)=\left(r_{\lambda}+1, s_{\lambda}\right)$, and if $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l$, then $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l$. Hence we can apply $(S)_{0, t, l}$ to $\lambda^{\prime}$, and we obtain that

$$
\Theta_{\left(r_{\lambda}+1\right)+2 t+l, s_{\lambda}+l}\left(\pi^{\prime}\right) \neq 0
$$

Since $\operatorname{Hom}_{U(p, q)}\left(\pi^{\prime}, \pi\right) \neq 0$, by the seesaw

we conclude that $\Theta_{r_{\lambda}+1+2 t+l, s_{\lambda}+l}(\pi) \neq 0$. Therefore, we have $(S)_{0, t, l} \Rightarrow(S)_{-1, t, l}$.
The proofs of (2) and (3) are similar. Note that the cases 5 in Lemmas 5.2 and 5.3 cannot occur since $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$. We omit the detail.

Corollary 5.5. The statement $(S)_{k, t, l}$ is true for $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ such that $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$.
Proof. When $k>0$, the statement $(S)_{k, t, l}$ is reduced to $(S)_{0, t, l-k}$ by Proposition 5.4 (3). We prove $(S)_{k, t, l}$ for $k \leq 0$ by induction on $t+l$. For $k=-1,0$ and $T \geq 0$, we consider the following statement:
$\left(S^{\prime}\right)_{k, T}$ : the statement $(S)_{k, t, l}$ is true for any $t, l \geq 0$ such that $t+l \leq T$.
Note that $(S)_{0,0,0}$ is Paul's result (Theorem 3.13). This implies $(S)_{-1,0,0}$ (Proposition 5.4 (1)). In particular, $\left(S^{\prime}\right)_{k, 0}$ is true. Also the tower property (Proposition 3.6) implies $(S)_{k, 0, l}$ for $k=-1,0$ and $l \geq 0$. By Proposition 5.4 (1) and (2), we have

$$
\left(S^{\prime}\right)_{-1, T-1} \Rightarrow\left(S^{\prime}\right)_{0, T} \Rightarrow\left(S^{\prime}\right)_{-1, T}
$$

for any $T>0$. Hence by induction, we obtain $\left(S^{\prime}\right)_{k, T}$ for $k=-1,0$ and $T \geq 0$.
Now we obtain the sufficient conditions of the non-vanishing of theta lifts.
Corollary 5.6. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Then the statement $(S)_{k, t, l}$ is true in general.

Proof. The statement $(S)_{0,0, l}$ follows from Paul's result (Theorem 3.13) and the tower property (Proposition 3.6). By a similar argument to the proof of Proposition 5.4, the other assertions follow from Corollary 5.5 by using a seesaw identity (Proposition 3.11 (1)) and Lemmas 5.1, 5.2 and 5.3. We omit the detail.

Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Set $r=r_{\lambda}, s=s_{\lambda}$, and $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. Recall as in Theorem 3.14 (3) that when $k_{\lambda}=-1$ but $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V}$ (with even multiplicity), exactly one of $\Theta_{r-1, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s-1}(\pi)$ is nonzero. Now we can determine which is nonzero in terms of $\lambda$.

Corollary 5.7. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Set $r=r_{\lambda}, s=s_{\lambda}$, and $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. Suppose that $k_{\lambda}=-1$ but $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V}$ (with even multiplicity). Then $\Theta_{r, s-1}(\pi) \neq 0$ if and only if $(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}$.
Proof. Note that $r+s=p+q$, and that $(0,1)$ and $(0,-1)$ are both in $X_{\lambda}$ or both not in $X_{\lambda}$. By a result of Paul (Theorem 3.14 (3)) and the conservation relation (Theorem 3.7), we see that exactly one of $\Theta_{r+1, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s+1}(\pi)$ is nonzero. Hence $\Theta_{r, s-1}(\pi) \neq 0$ if and only if $\Theta_{r+1, s}(\pi) \neq 0$. By the statement $(S)_{-1,0,0}$, we have

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{r+1, s}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\ \Theta_{r, s+1}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
$$

This completes the proof.
5.3. Vanishing. In this subsection, we prove necessary conditions of non-vanishing of theta lifts in Theorem
4.2. First, we prove the following:

Proposition 5.8. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Set $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. Let $k=k_{\lambda}$, $r=r_{\lambda}, s=s_{\lambda}, X_{\lambda}$ and $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$ be as in Definition 4.1.
(1) Suppose that $k=-1$. For $t \geq 1$ and $l \geq 0$, if $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(t+l)>l$ or $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{-}(t+l)>l$, then $\Theta_{r+2 t+l+1, s+l}(\pi)=0$.
(2) Suppose that $k \geq 0$. For $t \geq 1$ and $l \geq k$, if $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{+}(t+l)>l$ or $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{-}(t+l)>l$, then $\Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi)=0$.

Proof. The proof is similar to that of [P2, Theorem 3.14]. Suppose for the sake of contradiction that for some $t \geq 1$ and $l \geq \max \{0, k\}$,

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if } k \geq 0 \\ \Theta_{r+1+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if } k=-1\end{cases}
$$

but there exists $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$ such that $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l)>l$. Write

$$
\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l)=\left\{\left(\alpha_{1}, \epsilon\right),\left(\alpha_{2}, \epsilon\right), \ldots,\left(\alpha_{l+1}, \epsilon\right), \ldots\right\}
$$

with $\epsilon \alpha_{1}<\cdots<\epsilon \alpha_{l+1}<\cdots<t+l-(k-1) / 2$. We set

$$
a= \begin{cases}\alpha_{l+1}+\epsilon / 2 & \text { if } k \text { is even } \\ \alpha_{l+1} & \text { if } k \text { is odd }\end{cases}
$$

Then $a$ is an integer. By the definition of $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l)$ and an easy calculation, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \#\left\{(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda} \mid \epsilon \alpha>0, \epsilon \alpha<\epsilon a\right\}-\#\left\{(\alpha,-\epsilon) \in X_{\lambda} \mid-\epsilon \alpha<0,-\epsilon \alpha>-\epsilon a\right\} \\
& = \begin{cases}l+1-\frac{k}{2} & \text { if } k \text { is even, } \\
l-\frac{k+1}{2} & \text { if } k \text { is odd, } k>0 \text { and }(0, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}, \\
l-\frac{k-1}{2} & \text { if } k \text { is odd, } k>0 \text { and }(0,-\epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}, \\
l & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}, \\
l+1 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda} .\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

Also, since $l \geq \max \{0, k\}$, we have $\epsilon a>0$. Hence

$$
\left\{(\alpha,-\epsilon) \in X_{\lambda} \mid-\epsilon \alpha>0,-\epsilon \alpha<-\epsilon a\right\}=\left\{(\alpha, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda} \mid \epsilon \alpha<0, \epsilon \alpha>\epsilon a\right\}=\emptyset
$$

We set

$$
\delta= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } k \text { is odd, } k>0 \text { and }\left(\alpha_{l+1},-\epsilon\right) \in X_{\lambda} \\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& x=\#\left\{\left(\alpha, \epsilon^{\prime}\right) \in X_{\lambda} \mid \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha>0, \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha>\epsilon^{\prime} a\right\}, \\
& y=\#\left\{\left(\alpha, \epsilon^{\prime}\right) \in X_{\lambda} \mid \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha>0, \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha<\epsilon^{\prime} a\right\} \\
& z=\#\left\{\left(\alpha, \epsilon^{\prime}\right) \in X_{\lambda} \mid \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha<0, \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha>\epsilon^{\prime} a\right\}, \\
& w=\#\left\{\left(\alpha, \epsilon^{\prime}\right) \in X_{\lambda} \mid \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha<0, \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha<\epsilon^{\prime} a\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

and $v=\left(n-\# X_{\lambda}\right) / 2$. Then by Definition 4.1, we have

$$
(x+y+v, z+w+v)= \begin{cases}\left(r+\frac{k}{2}, s+\frac{k}{2}\right) & \text { if } k \text { is even, } \\ \left(r+\frac{k-1}{2}-1, s+\frac{k-1}{2}-\delta\right) & \text { if } k \text { is odd and } k>0 \\ (r-1, s-\delta) & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\ (r-2, s-1-\delta) & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
$$

On the other hand, by the above calculation, we have

$$
y-z= \begin{cases}l+1-\frac{k}{2} & \text { if } k \text { is even, } \\ l-\frac{k+1}{2} & \text { if } k \text { is odd, } k>0 \text { and }(0, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}, \\ l-\frac{k-1}{2} & \text { if } k \text { is odd, } k>0 \text { and }(0,-\epsilon) \in X_{\lambda} \\ l & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}, \\ l+1 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
$$

Now we consider $\lambda_{a}=\left(\phi \otimes \chi_{-2 a}, \eta\right)$ and $\pi\left(\phi \otimes \chi_{-2 a}, \eta\right)=\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-a}$. Note that $k_{\lambda_{a}} \equiv k \bmod 2$. There exists a bijection

$$
X_{\lambda} \rightarrow X_{\lambda_{a}}, \quad\left(\alpha, \epsilon^{\prime}\right) \mapsto\left(\alpha-a, \epsilon^{\prime}\right)
$$

We set

$$
\begin{aligned}
r^{\prime} & =\#\left\{\left(\alpha^{\prime}, \epsilon^{\prime}\right) \in X_{\lambda_{a}} \mid \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha^{\prime}>0\right\}+v+\delta \\
s^{\prime} & =\#\left\{\left(\alpha^{\prime}, \epsilon^{\prime}\right) \in X_{\lambda_{a}} \mid \epsilon^{\prime} \alpha^{\prime}<0\right\}+v+\delta
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that

$$
r^{\prime}+s^{\prime}= \begin{cases}n & \text { if } k \text { is even } \\ n-1+\delta & \text { if } k \text { is odd }\end{cases}
$$

By the above bijection, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
r^{\prime} & = \begin{cases}x+z+v & \text { if } k \text { is even, } \\
x+z+v+\delta & \text { if } k>0, k \text { is odd and }(0, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}, \\
x+z+v+\delta+1 & \text { if } k>0, k \text { is odd and }(0,-\epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}, \\
x+z+v+\delta & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}, \\
x+z+v+\delta+1 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases} \\
& = \begin{cases}r+k-l-1 & \text { if } k \text { is even, } \\
r+k-l-1+\delta & \text { if } k>0 \text { and } k \text { is odd, } \\
r-l-1+\delta & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\
r-l-2+\delta & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
s^{\prime} & = \begin{cases}y+w+v & \text { if } k \text { is even, } \\
y+w+v+\delta+1 & \text { if } k>0, k \text { is odd and }(0, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}, \\
y+w+v+\delta & \text { if } k>0, k \text { is odd and }(0,-\epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}, \\
y+w+v+\delta & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}, \\
y+w+v+\delta+1 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases} \\
& = \begin{cases}s+l+1 & \text { if } k \text { is even, } \\
s+l & \text { if } k>0 \text { and } k \text { is odd, } \\
s+l & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}, \\
s+l+1 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda} .\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

By Theorems 3.13, 3.14 (1) and Corollary 5.7, we see that

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{r^{\prime}-1, s^{\prime}}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-a}\right) \neq 0 & \text { if } \delta=1 \\ \Theta_{r^{\prime}, s^{\prime}}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-a}\right) \neq 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

i.e., $\Theta_{r^{\prime}-\delta, s^{\prime}}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-a}\right) \neq 0$. Hence $\Theta_{s^{\prime}, r^{\prime}-\delta}\left(\pi^{\vee} \otimes \operatorname{det}^{a} \otimes \chi_{V}^{2}\right) \neq 0$ by Proposition 3.9. By the seesaw (Proposition 3.11 (2))

we deduce that

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{(r+2 t+l)+s^{\prime},(s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)}\left(\operatorname{det}^{a} \cdot \chi_{V_{0,0}}\right) \neq 0 & \text { if } k \geq 0 \\ \Theta_{(r+1+2 t+l)+s^{\prime},(s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)}\left(\operatorname{det}^{a} \cdot \chi_{V_{0,0}}\right) \neq 0 & \text { if } k=-1\end{cases}
$$

Here, $\chi_{V_{0,0}}=\chi_{V_{(r+2 t+l)+s^{\prime},(s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)}}$ if $k \geq 0$, and $\chi_{V_{0,0}}=\chi_{V_{(r+1+2 t+l)+s^{\prime},(s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)}}$ if $k=-1$.
On the other hand, since

$$
r+s= \begin{cases}n-k & \text { if } k \geq 0 \\ n & \text { if } k=-1\end{cases}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (r+2 t+l)+s^{\prime}= \begin{cases}(n-1)+2 t+2 l+2-k & \text { if } k \text { is even }, \\
(n-1)+2 t+2 l-(k-1) & \text { if } k>0 \text { and } k \text { is odd } \\
(n-1)+2 t+2 l+1 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}, \\
(n-2)+2 t+2 l+3 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda},\end{cases} \\
& (s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)= \begin{cases}n-2 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}, \\
n-1 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

In particular, $\min \left\{(r+2 t+l)+s^{\prime},(s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)\right\}=(s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)<n$ and

$$
\left((r+2 t+l)+s^{\prime}\right)-\left((s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)\right)= \begin{cases}2 t+2 l+2-k & \text { if } k \text { is even } \\ 2 t+2 l-(k-1) & \text { if } k>0 \text { and } k \text { is odd } \\ 2 t+2 l+1 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\ 2 t+2 l+3 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
$$

Moreover, since $\epsilon \alpha_{l+1}+(k-1) / 2<t+l$ and $\epsilon a>0$, we have

$$
\begin{cases}0<\epsilon a<t+l+1-\frac{k}{2} & \text { if } k \text { is even } \\ 0<\epsilon a<t+l-\frac{k-1}{2} & \text { if } k \text { is odd. }\end{cases}
$$

By Proposition 3.10, we must have

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{(r+2 t+l)+s^{\prime},(s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)}\left(\operatorname{det}^{a} \cdot \chi_{V_{0,0}}\right)=0 & \text { if } k \geq 0 \\ \Theta_{(r+1+2 t+l)+s^{\prime},(s+l)+\left(r^{\prime}-\delta\right)}\left(\operatorname{det}^{a} \cdot \chi_{V_{0,0}}\right)=0 & \text { if } k=-1\end{cases}
$$

We obtain a contradiction.
By a similar argument, we obtain the following.
Proposition 5.9. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Set $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. Let $k=k_{\lambda}$, $r=r_{\lambda}$ and $s=s_{\lambda}$ be as in Definition 4.1.
(1) Suppose that $k=-1$. If $\Theta_{r+2 t+l+1, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0$ for some $t \geq 1$, then $l \geq 0$.
(2) Suppose that $k \geq 0$. If $\Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0$ for some $t \geq 1$, then $l \geq k$.

Proof. We give an outline of the proof. Suppose that

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if } k \geq 0 \\ \Theta_{r+1+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if } k=-1\end{cases}
$$

for some $t \geq 1$. Set

$$
a= \begin{cases}\frac{k}{2} \epsilon & \text { if } k \text { is even, } k>0 \text { and }\left(\frac{k-1}{2}, \epsilon\right) \in X_{\lambda} \\ \frac{k-1}{2} \epsilon & \text { if } k \text { is odd, } k>0 \text { and }\left(\frac{k-1}{2}, \epsilon\right) \in X_{\lambda} \\ 0 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { or } k=0\end{cases}
$$

By Theorems 3.13, 3.14 (1) and Corollary 5.7, we have

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{r, s+k}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-a}\right) \neq 0 & \text { if } k \text { is even } \\ \Theta_{r, s+k-1}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-a}\right) \neq 0 & \text { if } k \text { is odd and } k>0 \\ \Theta_{r, s-1}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-a}\right) \neq 0 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \text { but } \chi_{V} \subset \phi \\ \Theta_{r, s+1}\left(\pi \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-a}\right) \neq 0 & \text { if } k=-1 \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\left(\text { so } \chi_{V} \subset \phi\right)\end{cases}
$$

By a similar argument to the proof of Proposition 5.8, a seesaw identity (Proposition 3.11 (2)) and Proposition 3.10 imply that $l \geq \max \{0, k\}$. We omit the detail.

By Propositions 5.8 and 5.9 , we have the necessary conditions.
Corollary 5.10. Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be a pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Set $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. Let $k=k_{\lambda}$, $r=r_{\lambda}, s=s_{\lambda}, X_{\lambda}$ and $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(T)$ be as in Definition 4.1. Let $t$ be a positive integer.
(1) Suppose that $k=-1$. If $\Theta_{r+2 t+l+1, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0$, then $l \geq 0$ and $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$.
(2) Suppose that $k \geq 0$. If $\Theta_{r+2 t+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0$, then $l \geq k$ and $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(t+l) \leq l$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$.
5.4. Going-down towers. By Corollaries 5.6 and 5.10 , we can determine the first occurrence indices $m_{d}(\pi)$ of the $d$-th Witt tower of theta lifts of $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$ when $d-\left(r_{\lambda}-s_{\lambda}\right)>1$ with $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$. By Lemma 4.4, we can also determine $m_{d}(\pi)$ when $d-\left(r_{\lambda}-s_{\lambda}\right)<-1$. In particular, if $\left|d-\left(r_{\lambda}-s_{\lambda}\right)\right|>1$, then

$$
m_{d}(\pi) \geq n+2
$$

In this case, we call the $d$-th Witt tower a going-up tower with respect to $\pi$. When $\left|d-\left(r_{\lambda}-s_{\lambda}\right)\right| \leq 1$, we call the $d$-th Witt tower a going-down tower with respect to $\pi$. By the conservation relation, we can determine the first occurrence indices of the going-down Witt towers.

Proposition 5.11. Assume the local Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture (Conjecture 2.2). Let $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ be $a$ pair of $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ and $\eta \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$. Set $\pi=\pi(\phi, \eta)$. Let $k=k_{\lambda}, r=r_{\lambda}, s=s_{\lambda}$ and $X_{\lambda}$ be as in Definition 4.1.
(1) Suppose that $k=-1$. Then for an integer $l$, we have

$$
\Theta_{r+1+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow \begin{cases}l \geq 0 & \text { if } \phi \text { does not contain } \chi_{V} \\ l \geq-1 & \text { if } \phi \text { contains } \chi_{V} \text { but }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\ l \geq 1 & \text { if } \phi \text { contains } \chi_{V} \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
\Theta_{r+l, s+1+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow \begin{cases}l \geq 0 & \text { if } \phi \text { does not contain } \chi_{V} \\ l \geq 1 & \text { if } \phi \text { contains } \chi_{V} \text { but }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\ l \geq-1 & \text { if } \phi \text { contains } \chi_{V} \text { and }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
$$

(2) Suppose that $k \geq 0$. Consider the following three conditions on $\lambda=(\phi, \eta)$ :
(chain condition 2): $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ contains both $\chi_{k+1}$ and $\chi_{-(k+1)}$, so that

$$
\phi \chi_{V}^{-1} \supset \underbrace{\chi_{k+1}+\chi_{k-1}+\cdots+\chi_{-(k-1)}+\chi_{-(k+1)}}_{k+2}
$$

(even-ness condition): at least one of $\chi_{k+1}$ and $\chi_{-(k+1)}$ is contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with even multiplicity;
(alternating condition 2): $\eta\left(e_{V, k+1-2 i}\right) \neq \eta\left(e_{V, k-1-2 i}\right)$ for $i=0, \ldots, k$.

Then for an integer l, we have

$$
\Theta_{r+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow \begin{cases}l \geq-1 & \text { if } \lambda \text { satisfies these three conditions, } \\ l \geq 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

When $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, this proposition has been proven by Paul [P2, Proposition 3.4] in terms of Harish-Chandra parameters (not using the Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture).
Proof of Proposition 5.11. We show (1). Suppose that $k=-1$. If $\phi$ does not contain $\chi_{V}$, then by Theorem 3.14 (1), we have $\Theta_{r+1, s}(\pi) \neq 0$ and $\Theta_{r, s+1}(\pi) \neq 0$. By the tower property (Proposition 3.6) and the conservation relation (Theorem 3.7), we see that $\Theta_{r+1+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow l \geq 0$, and $\Theta_{r+l, s+1+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow$ $l \geq 0$.

Now we assume that $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V}$ (with even multiplicity). Then by Corollary 5.7, we have

$$
\begin{cases}\Theta_{r, s-1}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if }(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda} \\ \Theta_{r-1, s}(\pi) \neq 0 & \text { if }(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}\end{cases}
$$

When $(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}$, by Corollary 5.6, $\Theta_{r+2, s+1}(\pi) \neq 0$ if $\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(1)=\emptyset$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$. By Definition 4.1 $(5), \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(1)=\emptyset$ if and only if $(\epsilon, \epsilon) \notin X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}$. However, since $(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}$, by Definition 4.1 (4), we see that $X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}$ cannot contain $(\epsilon, \epsilon)$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$. Hence we deduce that $\Theta_{r+2, s+1}(\pi) \neq 0$. By the tower property (Proposition 3.6) and the conservation relation (Theorem 3.7), we see that $\Theta_{r+1+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow l \geq 1$, and $\Theta_{r+l, s+1+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow l \geq-1$.

Now suppose that $\phi$ contains $\chi_{V}$ (with even multiplicity) but $(0, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}$. Set $\lambda^{\vee}=\left(\phi^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{V}^{2}, \eta^{\vee}\right)$. By Lemma 4.4, we have $(0, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda^{\vee}}$ so that $\Theta_{s+2, r+1}\left(\pi^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{V}^{2}\right) \neq 0$ by the above case. By Proposition 3.9, we deduce that $\Theta_{r+1, s+2}(\pi) \neq 0$. By the tower property (Proposition 3.6) and the conservation relation (Theorem 3.7), we see that $\Theta_{r+1+l, s+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow l \geq-1$, and $\Theta_{r+l, s+1+l}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow l \geq 1$. This completes the proof of (1).

We show (2). Suppose that $k \geq 0$. By Corollaries 5.6, 5.10 and Proposition 3.9, we see that

$$
m_{d}(\pi) \geq r+s+2 k+2=n+k+2
$$

for any integer $d$ such that $d \neq r-s$. Hence $\min \left\{m_{+}(\pi), m_{-}(\pi)\right\}=m_{r-s}(\pi)$. Moreover, if $\mid d-(r-$ $s) \mid>2$, then $m_{d}(\pi) \geq n+k+4$. We compute $m_{r-s+2}(\pi)$ and $m_{r-s-2}(\pi)$. By Corollaries 5.6 and 5.10, $\Theta_{r+2+k, s+k}(\pi) \neq 0$ if and only if $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(1+k) \leq k$ for each $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$.

First, we consider the case where $k=0$. Then by Definition $4.1(5), \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(1)=\emptyset$ if and only if $(\epsilon / 2, \epsilon) \notin X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}$. Also by Definition $4.1(4),(\epsilon / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}$ if and only if $(\epsilon / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$. Hence

$$
\Theta_{r+2, s}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow\left(\frac{\epsilon}{2}, \epsilon\right) \notin X_{\lambda} \text { for each } \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}
$$

Similarly, by using Proposition 3.9, we see that

$$
\Theta_{r, s+2}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow\left(\frac{\epsilon}{2}, \epsilon\right) \notin X_{\lambda \vee} \text { for each } \epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}
$$

Now we assume that both $\Theta_{r+2, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s+2}(\pi)$ are zero. By Lemma 4.4 (4), this condition is equivalent to saying that $(1 / 2,+1) \in X_{\lambda} \cap X_{\lambda \vee}$ or $(-1 / 2,-1) \in X_{\lambda} \cap X_{\lambda \vee}$. We check (chain condition 2) and (evenness condition). For $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, if $\chi_{-\epsilon}$ were not contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$, then we must have $(\epsilon / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$ and $(-\epsilon / 2,-\epsilon) \in X_{\lambda^{\vee}}$. This contradicts Lemma 4.4 (4). Hence $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ contains both $\chi_{1}$ and $\chi_{-1}$. If both $\chi_{1}$ and $\chi_{-1}$ were contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with odd multiplicities, then by Lemma 4.4 (2), there must be $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$ such that $(\epsilon / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda} \cap X_{\lambda \vee}$. This implies that $(1 / 2, \epsilon),(-1 / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$, which contradicts that $k_{\lambda}=0$ (see Definition 4.1 (1)).

We claim that under assuming (chain condition 2) and (even-ness condition), both $\Theta_{r+2, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s+2}(\pi)$ are zero if and only if $\lambda$ satisfies (alternating condition 2), which is equivalent to saying that $\eta\left(e_{V, 1}\right) \neq \eta\left(e_{V,-1}\right)$. Replacing $\lambda$ with $\lambda^{\vee}$ if necessary, we may assume that $\chi_{1}$ appears in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with even multiplicity. Write

$$
\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}+\left(\xi_{1}+\cdots+\xi_{v}\right)+\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1}+\cdots+{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right)
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv \kappa-1 \bmod 2$ and $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{u}$;
- $\xi_{i}$ is a unitary character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$(which can be of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ );
- $u+2 v=n$.

Then we see that

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left(\frac{1}{2},+1\right) \in X_{\lambda} \Longleftrightarrow \eta\left(e_{V, 1}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>1 / 2\right\}+1}, \\
\left(-\frac{1}{2},-1\right) \in X_{\lambda \vee} \Longleftrightarrow \eta\left(e_{V, 1}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>1 / 2\right\}} \\
\left(-\frac{1}{2},-1\right) \in X_{\lambda} \Longleftrightarrow \eta\left(e_{V,-1}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>-1 / 2\right\}+1}, \\
\left(\frac{1}{2},+1\right) \in X_{\lambda \vee} \Longleftrightarrow \eta\left(e_{V,-1}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>-1 / 2\right\}} .
\end{gathered}
$$

In particular, both $\Theta_{r+2, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s+2}(\pi)$ are zero, i.e., $(1 / 2,+1) \in X_{\lambda} \cap X_{\lambda \vee}$ or $(-1 / 2,-1) \in X_{\lambda} \cap X_{\lambda \vee}$ if and only if

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ \eta ( e _ { V , 1 } ) = ( - 1 ) ^ { \# \{ i \in \{ 1 , \ldots , u \} | \alpha _ { i } > 1 / 2 \} + 1 } , } \\
{ \eta ( e _ { V , - 1 } ) = ( - 1 ) ^ { \# \{ i \in \{ 1 , \ldots , u \} | \alpha _ { i } > - 1 / 2 \} } , }
\end{array} \quad \text { or } \quad \left\{\begin{array}{l}
\eta\left(e_{V, 1}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>1 / 2\right\}} \\
\eta\left(e_{V,-1}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>-1 / 2\right\}+1}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

Since $1 / 2 \notin\left\{\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{u}\right\}$, we see that

$$
\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>1 / 2\right\}=\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>-1 / 2\right\}
$$

Hence under assuming (chain condition 2) and (even-ness condition), both $\Theta_{r+2, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s+2}(\pi)$ are zero if and only if $\eta\left(e_{V, 1}\right) \neq \eta\left(e_{V,-1}\right)$.

Similarly, when $k>0$, we see that

$$
\Theta_{r+2+k, s+k}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow\left(\frac{k+1}{2} \epsilon, \epsilon\right) \notin X_{\lambda}
$$

and

$$
\Theta_{r+k, s+2+k}(\pi) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow\left(\frac{k+1}{2} \epsilon, \epsilon\right) \notin X_{\lambda^{\vee}},
$$

where $\epsilon$ is the unique element in $\{ \pm 1\}$ such that $((k-1) / 2, \epsilon), \ldots,(-(k-1) / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$. Also, it is easy to see that if both $\Theta_{r+2+k, s+k}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r+k, s+2+k}(\pi)$ are zero, then $\lambda$ satisfies (chain condition 2) and (even-ness condition). Furthermore, when $\chi_{k+1}$ appears in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with even multiplicity, we see that

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left(\frac{k+1}{2} \epsilon, \epsilon\right) \in X_{\lambda} \Longleftrightarrow \eta\left(e_{V,(k+1) \epsilon}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>(k+1) \epsilon / 2\right\}+1}, \\
\left(\frac{k+1}{2} \epsilon, \epsilon\right) \in X_{\lambda \vee} \Longleftrightarrow \eta\left(e_{V,-(k+1) \epsilon}\right)=(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>-(k+1) \epsilon / 2\right\}}
\end{gathered}
$$

Since $((k-1) / 2, \epsilon), \ldots,(-(k-1) / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$, we have

$$
\eta\left(e_{V, k+1-2 j}\right)=\epsilon(-1)^{\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>(k+1-2 j) \epsilon / 2\right\}}
$$

for any $j=1, \ldots, k$. Since $\chi_{k+1-2 j}$ appears in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with odd multiplicity for any $j=1, \ldots, k$ (see (odd-ness condition) in Definition 4.1 (1)), we see that

$$
\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>(k+1-2 j) \epsilon / 2\right\}-\#\left\{i \in\{1, \ldots, u\} \mid \alpha_{i}>(k-1-2 j) \epsilon / 2\right\}=-1
$$

for any $j=1, \ldots, k-1$. Hence under assuming (chain condition 2) and (even-ness condition), both $\Theta_{r+2+k, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s+2+k}(\pi)$ are zero if and only if

$$
\eta\left(e_{V, k+1}\right) \neq \eta\left(e_{V, k-1}\right) \neq \cdots \neq \eta\left(e_{V,-(k-1)}\right) \neq \eta\left(e_{V,-(k+1)}\right),
$$

which is (alternating condition 2 ).
We have shown that for $k \geq 0$, both $\Theta_{r+2+k, s}(\pi)$ and $\Theta_{r, s+2+k}(\pi)$ are zero if and only if $\lambda$ satisfies (chain condition 2), (even-ness condition) and (alternating condition 2). In this case, there exists $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$
such that $\chi_{(k+1) \epsilon}$ is contained in $\phi \chi_{V}^{-1}$ with even multiplicity. Suppose that $((k+1) \epsilon / 2, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda}$ (so that $((k-1) / 2, \epsilon), \ldots,(-(k-1) / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$ when $\left.k>0\right)$. Then by Definition 4.1 (4) and (5), we see that $((k+3) \epsilon / 2, \epsilon) \notin X_{\lambda}^{(\infty)}$, so that

$$
\mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(k+2)=\left\{\left(\frac{k+1}{2} \epsilon, \epsilon\right),\left(\frac{k-1}{2} \epsilon, \epsilon\right), \ldots,\left(-\frac{k-1}{2} \epsilon, \epsilon\right)\right\}
$$

Hence $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{\epsilon}(k+2)=k+1$. Moreover, since $((k+1) \epsilon / 2, \epsilon) \in X_{\lambda} \vee$ so that $(-(k+1) \epsilon / 2,-\epsilon) \notin X_{\lambda}$ by Lemma 4.4 (4), we see that $\# \mathcal{C}_{\lambda}^{-\epsilon}(k+2) \leq k+1$. Hence by Corollary 5.6, we have $\Theta_{r+3+k, s+1+k}(\pi) \neq 0$. Similarly, if $((k+1) \epsilon / 2, \pm 1) \notin X_{\lambda}$ (so that $((k-1) / 2,-\epsilon), \ldots,(-(k-1) / 2,-\epsilon) \in X_{\lambda}$ when $\left.k>0\right)$, then $(-(k+1) \epsilon / 2, \pm 1) \in X_{\lambda^{\vee}}$, so that we have $\Theta_{r+1+k, s+3+k}(\pi) \neq 0$. In any case, we have

$$
\min \left\{m_{r-s+2}(\pi), m_{r-s-2}(\pi)\right\}=r+s+4+2 k=n+4+k
$$

By the conservation relation (Theorem 3.7), we conclude that

$$
m_{r-s}(\pi)= \begin{cases}n-2-k & \text { if } \lambda \text { satisfies the three conditions, } \\ n-k & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

By the tower property (Proposition 3.6), we obtain (2).
By Corollaries 5.6, 5.10 and Proposition, 5.11, we obtain Theorem 4.2.

## Appendix A. Explicit local Langlands correspondence for discrete series representations

In this appendix, we review the local Langlands correspondence established by Langlands himself [L], Vogan [V3] and Shelstad [S1, S2, S3], and explain the relation between the Harish-Chandra parameters and $L$-parameters for discrete series representations of unitary groups.
A.1. Weil groups and representations. Recall that the Weil group $W_{\mathbb{R}}$ of $\mathbb{R}\left(\right.$ resp. $W_{\mathbb{C}}$ of $\left.\mathbb{C}\right)$ is defined by

$$
W_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathbb{C}^{\times}, \quad W_{\mathbb{R}}=\mathbb{C}^{\times} \cup \mathbb{C}^{\times} j
$$

with

$$
j^{2}=-1 \in \mathbb{C}^{\times}, \quad j z j^{-1}=\bar{z}
$$

for $z \in \mathbb{C}^{\times} \subset W_{\mathbb{R}}$. Then we have an exact sequence

$$
1 \longrightarrow W_{\mathbb{C}} \longrightarrow W_{\mathbb{R}} \longrightarrow \operatorname{Gal}(\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R}) \longrightarrow 1
$$

where $W_{\mathbb{R}} \rightarrow \operatorname{Gal}(\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R})$ is defined so that $j \mapsto($ the complex conjugate $) \in \operatorname{Gal}(\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R})$. Also, the map

$$
j \mapsto-1, \quad \mathbb{C}^{\times} \ni z \mapsto z \bar{z}
$$

gives an isomorphism $W_{\mathbb{R}}^{\mathrm{ab}} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{\times}$.
For $F=\mathbb{R}$ or $F=\mathbb{C}$, a representation of $W_{F}$ is a semisimple continuous homomorphism $\varphi: W_{F} \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$. Hence $\varphi$ decomposes into a direct sum of irreducible representations.

For $2 \alpha \in \mathbb{Z}$ (i.e., $\alpha \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ ), we define a character $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ of $W_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathbb{C}^{\times}$by

$$
\chi_{2 \alpha}(z)=\bar{z}^{-2 \alpha}(z \bar{z})^{\alpha}
$$

for $z \in \mathbb{C}^{\times}$. A representation $\phi: W_{\mathbb{C}} \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ is called conjugate self-dual of sign $b \in\{ \pm 1\}$ if there exists a non-degenerate bilinear form $B: \mathbb{C}^{n} \times \mathbb{C}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ such that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
B(\phi(z) x, \phi(\bar{z}) y)=B(x, y) \\
B(y, \phi(-1) x)=b \cdot B(x, y)
\end{array}\right.
$$

for $x, y \in \mathbb{C}^{n}$ and $z \in W_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathbb{C}^{\times}$. Such a representation $\phi$ is of the form

$$
\phi=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}}+\cdots+\chi_{2 \alpha_{u}}+\left(\xi_{1}+\cdots+\xi_{v}\right)+\left({ }^{c} \xi_{1}^{-1}+\cdots+{ }^{c} \xi_{v}^{-1}\right)
$$

where

- $\alpha_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ such that $(-1)^{2 \alpha_{i}}=b$;
- $\xi_{i}$ is a character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$(which can be of the form $\chi_{2 \alpha}$ );
- $u+2 v=n$.

For more precisions, see e.g., [GGP1, §3].
A.2. $L$-groups and local Langlands correspondence for unitary groups. Let $G=\mathrm{U}_{n}$ be a unitary group of size $n$, which is regarded as a connected reductive algebraic group over $\mathbb{R}$. Hence $G(\mathbb{R})=\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ for some $(p, q)$ such that $p+q=n$. Its dual group $\widehat{G}$ is isomorphic to $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$. The Weil group $W_{\mathbb{R}}=\mathbb{C}^{\times} \cup \mathbb{C}^{\times} j$ acts on $\widehat{G}=\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ as follows: $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$acts trivially, and $j$ acts by

$$
j: \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C}) \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C}), g \mapsto\left({ }^{(-1)^{n-1}} . \quad .{ }^{1} g^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{ll} 
\\
(-1)^{n-1} &
\end{array}\right)^{-1}\right.
$$

The $L$-group of $G$ is the semi-direct product ${ }^{L} G=\widehat{G} \rtimes W_{\mathbb{R}}=\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C}) \rtimes W_{\mathbb{R}}$.
An admissible homomorphism of $G(\mathbb{R})=\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ is a homomorphism $\varphi: W_{\mathbb{R}} \rightarrow{ }^{L} G$ such that the composition

$$
\operatorname{pr} \circ \varphi: W_{\mathbb{R}} \rightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C}) \rtimes W_{\mathbb{R}} \rightarrow W_{\mathbb{R}}
$$

is identity and the restriction of $\varphi$ to $W_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathbb{C}^{\times}$is continuous and semisimple. Let $\Phi\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ be the set of $\widehat{G}$-conjugacy classes of admissible homomorphisms of $\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$. For $\varphi \in \Phi\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, we define the component group $A_{\varphi}$ of $\varphi$ by

$$
A_{\varphi}=\pi_{0}(\operatorname{Cent}(\operatorname{Im}(\varphi), \widehat{G}))
$$

This is an elementary two abelian group. For $\varphi \in \Phi\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, the restriction of $\varphi$ gives a conjugate self-dual representation $\phi=\varphi \mid \mathbb{C}^{\times}$of $W_{\mathbb{C}}$ of dimension $n$ and $\operatorname{sign}(-1)^{n-1}$. Via the map $\varphi \mapsto \phi=\varphi \mid \mathbb{C}^{\times}$, we obtain an identification

$$
\Phi\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)=\left\{\text { conjugate self-dual representations of } W_{\mathbb{C}} \text { of dimension } n \text { and } \operatorname{sign}(-1)^{n-1}\right\}
$$

When $\phi=\varphi \mid \mathbb{C}^{\times}$, we also put $A_{\phi}=A_{\varphi}$.
We say that $\phi \in \Phi\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ is discrete (resp. tempered) if $\phi$ is of the form $\phi=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}}$ with $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv$ $n-1 \bmod 2$ and $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{n}$ (resp. $\phi$ is a direct sum of unitary characters of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$). We denote the subset of $\Phi\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ consisting of discrete elements (resp. tempered elements) by $\Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)\right)$.

When $\phi=\varphi \mid \mathbb{C}^{\times}=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}} \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, there exists a unique semisimple element $s_{2 \alpha_{i}} \in$ $\operatorname{Cent}\left(\operatorname{Im}(\varphi), \operatorname{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})\right)$ such that $W_{\mathbb{C}}$ acts on the $(-1)$-eigenspace of $s_{2 \alpha_{i}}$ by $\chi_{2 \alpha_{i}}$. Let $e_{2 \alpha_{i}}$ be the image of $s_{2 \alpha_{i}}$ in $A_{\phi}=\pi_{0}\left(\operatorname{Cent}\left(\operatorname{Im}(\varphi), \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})\right)\right)$. Then we have

$$
A_{\phi}=(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{2 \alpha_{n}}
$$

For more precisions, see [GGP1, §4]. In particular, we have $\left|A_{\phi}\right|=2^{n}$ for each $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$.
The local Langlands correspondence for unitary groups is as follows:
Theorem A.1. (1) There exists a canonical surjection

$$
\bigsqcup_{p+q=n} \operatorname{Irr}_{\mathrm{temp}}(\mathrm{U}(p, q)) \rightarrow \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right) .
$$

For $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, we denote by $\Pi_{\phi}$ the inverse image of $\phi$ under this map, and call $\Pi_{\phi}$ the $L$-packet associated to $\phi$.
(2) $\# \Pi_{\phi}=\# A_{\phi}$;
(3) $\pi \in \Pi_{\phi}$ is discrete series if and only if $\phi$ is discrete.
(4) The map $\pi \mapsto \phi$ is compatible with parabolic inductions (c.f., Theorem 2.1 (5)).
(5) If $\phi=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}} \in \Phi_{\mathrm{disc}}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, then $\Pi_{\phi}$ is the set of all discrete series representations of various $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ whose infinitesimal characters are equal to $\left(\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right)$ via the Harish-Chandra map.

Note that there exist exactly $(p+q)!/(p!\cdot q!)$ discrete series representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with a given infinitesimal character. Theorem 2.1 (2) and (5) are compatible with the well-known equation

$$
\sum_{p+q=n} \frac{(p+q)!}{p!\cdot q!}=2^{n}
$$

A.3. Whittaker data and generic representations. The unitary group $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with $p+q=n$ is quasisplit if and only if $|p-q| \leq 1$. For such $(p, q)$, a Whittaker datum of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ is the conjugacy class of pairs $\mathfrak{w}=(B, \mu)$, where $B=T U$ is an $\mathbb{R}$-rational Borel subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, and $\mu: U(\mathbb{R}) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$is a unitary generic character. Here, $T$ is a maximal $\mathbb{R}$-torus of $B$ and $U$ is the unipotent radical of $B$, and $T(\mathbb{R})$ acts on $U(\mathbb{R})$ by conjugation. A unitary character $\mu$ of $U(\mathbb{R})$ is called generic if the stabilizer of $\mu$ in $T(\mathbb{R})$ is equal to the center $Z(\mathbb{R})$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. We say that $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {temp }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ is $\mathfrak{w}$-generic if

$$
\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}\left(\pi, C_{\mathrm{mg}}^{\infty}(U(\mathbb{R}) \backslash \mathrm{U}(p, q), \mu)\right) \neq 0
$$

where $C_{\mathrm{mg}}^{\infty}(U(\mathbb{R}) \backslash \mathrm{U}(p, q), \mu)$ is the set of $C^{\infty}$-functions $W: \mathrm{U}(p, q) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ of moderate growth satisfying that $W(u g)=\mu(u) W(g)$ for $u \in U(\mathbb{R})$ and $g \in \mathrm{U}(p, q)$, and $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ acts on $C_{\mathrm{mg}}^{\infty}(U(\mathbb{R}) \backslash \mathrm{U}(p, q), \mu)$ by the right translation.

For each $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, the $L$-packet $\Pi_{\phi}$ is parametrized by the Pontryagin dual $\widehat{A_{\phi}}$ of $A_{\phi}$ if a quasi-split form $\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ and its Whittaker datum are fixed.

Theorem A.2. Fix $(p, q)$ such that $p+q=n$ and $|p-q| \leq 1$, and a Whittaker datum $\mathfrak{w}$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. Then
(1) for $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, there exists a bijection

$$
J_{\mathfrak{w}}: \Pi_{\phi} \rightarrow \widehat{A_{\phi}}
$$

which satisfies certain character identities;
(2) for each $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {temp }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, the L-packet $\Pi_{\phi}$ has a unique $\mathfrak{w}$-generic representation $\pi_{\mathfrak{w}}$;
(3) in particular, the bijection $J_{\mathfrak{w}}$ requires satisfying that $J_{\mathfrak{w}}\left(\pi_{\mathfrak{w}}\right)$ is the trivial character of $A_{\phi}$.

In the next subsection, we will review the definition of $J_{\mathfrak{w}}$ when $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, and give an explicit relation between $J_{\mathfrak{w}}(\pi)$ and the Harish-Chandra parameter of $\pi$ for $\pi \in \Pi_{\phi}$. To give a such relation, we need to specify which representation is $\mathfrak{w}$-generic.

Fix $(p, q)$ such that $p+q=n$ and $|p-q| \leq 1$. By [V1, $\S 6$, Theorem 6.2], for $\pi \in \operatorname{Irr}_{\text {disc }}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))$ with Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda$, the following are equivalent:

- $\pi$ is large;
- $\pi$ is $\mathfrak{w}$-generic for some Whittaker datum $\mathfrak{w}$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$;
- all simple roots in $\Delta_{\lambda}^{+}$are non-compact, i.e., do not belong to $\Delta\left(K_{p, q}, T_{p, q}\right)$.

Here,

- $K_{p, q} \cong \mathrm{U}(p) \times \mathrm{U}(q)$ is the usual maximal compact subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$;
- $T_{p, q}$ is the usual maximal compact torus of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$;
- $\Delta\left(\mathrm{U}(p, q), T_{p, q}\right)\left(\operatorname{resp} . \Delta\left(K_{p, q}, T_{p, q}\right)\right)$ is the set of roots of $T_{p, q}$ in $\mathrm{U}(p, q)\left(\right.$ resp. in $\left.K_{p, q}\right)$;
- $\Delta_{\lambda}^{+}$is the unique positive system of $\Delta\left(\mathrm{U}(p, q), T_{p, q}\right)$ for which $\lambda$ is dominant.

When $n$ is odd, there exist exactly two quasi-split forms $\mathrm{U}((n+1) / 2,(n-1) / 2)$ and $\mathrm{U}((n-1) / 2,(n+1) / 2)$. For $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$, we put $\left(p_{\epsilon}, q_{\epsilon}\right)=((n+\epsilon) / 2,(n-\epsilon) / 2)$. Then there exists a unique Whittaker datum $\mathfrak{w}_{\epsilon}$ of $\mathrm{U}\left(p_{\epsilon}, q_{\epsilon}\right)$. For integers $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{n}$, it is easy to see that the Harish-Chandra parameter of the unique large discrete series representation $\pi_{\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}}$of $\mathrm{U}\left(p_{ \pm}, q_{ \pm}\right)$with infinitesimal character $\left(\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right)$ is given by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\mathrm{HC}\left(\pi_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}\right)=\left(\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{3}, \ldots, \alpha_{n} ; \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{4}, \ldots, \alpha_{n-1}\right) \\
\mathrm{HC}\left(\pi_{\mathfrak{w}_{-}}\right)=\left(\alpha_{2}, \alpha_{4}, \ldots, \alpha_{n-1} ; \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{3}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

When $n=2 m$ is even, $\mathrm{U}(m, m)$ is the unique quasi-split form of size $n$. It has exactly two Whittaker data $\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}$constructed as follows. First, we set

$$
\left.\begin{array}{l}
G_{m}=\left\{g \in \mathrm{GL}_{2 m}(\mathbb{C}) \left\lvert\,{ }^{t} \bar{g}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{m} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{m}
\end{array}\right) g=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{m} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{m}
\end{array}\right)\right.\right\} \\
G_{m}^{\prime}=\left\{g^{\prime} \in \mathrm{GL}_{2 m}(\mathbb{C}) \left\lvert\, t \overline{g^{\prime}}\left(\begin{array}{l}
1 \\
1
\end{array}\right.\right.\right. \\
.
\end{array}\right) g^{\prime}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
1 \\
1
\end{array} . .\right.
$$

Note that $G_{m}$ is the usual coordinate of $\mathrm{U}(m, m)$, and these two groups are isomorphic to each other. Put

$$
T_{m}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc|ccc}
1 & & & & & -1 \\
& \ddots & & & . & \\
& & 1 & -1 & & \\
\hline & & 1 & 1 & & \\
& . & & & \ddots & \\
1 & & & & & 1
\end{array}\right) \in \mathrm{GL}_{2 m}(\mathbb{C})
$$

so that

$$
T_{m}^{-1}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc|ccc}
1 & & & & & 1 \\
& \ddots & & & . & \\
& & 1 & 1 & & \\
\hline & & -1 & 1 & & \\
& . & & & \ddots & \\
-1 & & & & & 1
\end{array}\right) \in \mathrm{GL}_{2 m}(\mathbb{C})
$$

Then

$$
{ }^{t} \overline{T_{m}}\left(\begin{array}{ccc} 
& & 1 \\
& . & \\
1 & &
\end{array}\right) T_{m}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{m} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{m}
\end{array}\right)
$$

so that the map

$$
f_{T_{m}}: G_{m} \rightarrow G_{m}^{\prime}, g \mapsto g^{\prime}:=T_{m} g T_{m}^{-1}
$$

gives an isomorphism. Let $B^{\prime}=T^{\prime} U^{\prime}$ be the Borel subgroup of $G_{m}^{\prime}$ consisting of upper triangular matrices, where $T^{\prime}$ is the maximal torus of $G_{m}^{\prime}$ consisting of diagonal matrices and $U^{\prime}$ is the unipotent radical of $B^{\prime}$. Define a generic character $\mu_{ \pm}$of $U^{\prime}(\mathbb{R})$ by

$$
\mu_{ \pm}(u)=\exp \left(\mp \pi \sqrt{-1} \operatorname{tr}_{\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R}}\left(\sqrt{-1}\left(u_{1,2}+\cdots+u_{m, m+1}\right)\right)\right)
$$

We set the Whittaker datum $\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}$of $G_{m}$ to be the conjugacy class of

$$
\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}=\left(f_{T_{m}}^{-1}\left(B^{\prime}\right), \mu_{ \pm} \circ f_{T_{m}}\right)
$$

Fix half-integers $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{n}$. Let $\pi$ and $\pi^{\prime}$ be the discrete series representations with Harish-Chandra parameters $\lambda$ and $\lambda^{\prime}$ given by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\lambda=\left(\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{3}, \ldots, \alpha_{n-1} ; \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{4}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right), \\
\lambda^{\prime}=\left(\alpha_{2}, \alpha_{4}, \ldots, \alpha_{n} ; \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{3}, \ldots, \alpha_{n-1}\right),
\end{array}\right.
$$

respectively. Then $\pi$ and $\pi^{\prime}$ are the two large discrete series representations with infinitesimal character $\left(\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right)$. Hence there exists $\epsilon \in\{ \pm 1\}$ such that $\pi$ (resp. $\pi^{\prime}$ ) is $\mathfrak{w}_{\epsilon}$-generic (resp. $\mathfrak{w}_{-\epsilon}$-generic).

To give an explicit description of the local Langlands correspondence for $\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$, we have to determine $\epsilon$. The following proposition says that $\epsilon=+1$. It seems to be well-known (c.f., [M2]), but we give a proof for the convenience of the reader.

Proposition A.3. Assume that $n=2 m$ is even. Fixing half-integers $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{n}$, we let $\pi$ (resp. $\pi^{\prime}$ ) be the large discrete series representation of $\mathrm{U}(m, m)$ whose Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda$ (resp. $\lambda^{\prime}$ ) is given as


Proof. We prove the proposition by induction on $m$. First suppose that $m=1$ so that $G_{1}=\mathrm{U}(1,1)$. Note that

$$
\mathfrak{g}=\operatorname{Lie}\left(G_{1}\right)=\left\{\left.\left(\begin{array}{cc}
a \sqrt{-1} & b+c \sqrt{-1} \\
b-c \sqrt{-1} & d \sqrt{-1}
\end{array}\right) \in \mathrm{M}_{2}(\mathbb{C}) \right\rvert\, a, b, c, d \in \mathbb{R}\right\}
$$

Set

$$
H=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & -1
\end{array}\right), \quad X_{+}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 1 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad X_{-}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 0 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right) \in \mathfrak{g}_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathrm{M}_{2}(\mathbb{C})
$$

Then $\left(H, X_{+}, X_{-}\right)$is an $\mathfrak{s l}_{2}$-triple, i.e.,

$$
\left[X_{+}, X_{-}\right]=H, \quad\left[H, X_{+}\right]=2 X_{+}, \quad\left[H, X_{-}\right]=-2 X_{-}
$$

Set

$$
n(z)=f_{T_{1}}^{-1}\left(\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & z \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1+z / 2 & z / 2 \\
-z / 2 & 1-z / 2
\end{array}\right), \quad m(x)=f_{T_{1}}^{-1}\left(\left(\begin{array}{cc}
x & 0 \\
0 & x^{-1}
\end{array}\right)\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
x+x^{-1} & -x+x^{-1} \\
-x+x^{-1} & x+x^{-1}
\end{array}\right)
$$

for $z \in \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. By the Iwasawa decomposition, any $g \in G$ has a unique decomposition

$$
g=n(z) m(x)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
t_{1} & 0 \\
0 & t_{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

for $t_{1}, t_{2} \in \mathbb{C}^{1}, z \in \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Define a $C^{\infty}$-function $W$ of moderate growth on $G_{1}$ by

$$
W\left(n(z) m(x)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
t_{1} & 0 \\
0 & t_{2}
\end{array}\right)\right)=\exp \left(-\pi \sqrt{-1} \operatorname{tr}_{\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R}}(\sqrt{-1} z)\right) \cdot x^{\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}+1} e^{-2 \pi x^{2}} \cdot t_{1}^{\alpha_{1}+1 / 2} t_{2}^{\alpha_{2}-1 / 2}
$$

for $t_{1}, t_{2} \in \mathbb{C}^{1}, z \in \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{R}$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$. Then it is easy to see that

$$
X_{-} \cdot W=0
$$

so that $W$ generates the discrete series representation of $G_{1}$ whose Harish-Chandra parameter is $\lambda=\left(\alpha_{1} ; \alpha_{2}\right)$. We conclude that $\pi$ is $\mathfrak{w}_{+}$-generic, so that $\pi^{\prime}$ is $\mathfrak{w}_{-}$-generic.

Next, we assume that $m>1$. Let $P=f_{T_{m}}^{-1}\left(P^{\prime}\right)=M N$ be the parabolic subgroup of $G_{m}=\mathrm{U}(m, m)$ given by

$$
P^{\prime}=\left\{\left.\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
a & * & * \\
0 & g_{0}^{\prime} & * \\
0 & 0 & \bar{a}^{-1}
\end{array}\right) \right\rvert\, a \in \mathbb{C}^{\times}, g_{0}^{\prime} \in G_{m-1}^{\prime}\right\}
$$

Here, $M=f_{T_{m}}^{-1}\left(M^{\prime}\right)$ is the Levi subgroup of $P$ such that $M^{\prime}$ consists of the block diagonal matrices of $P^{\prime}$. Let $\pi_{0}$ be the discrete series representation of $\mathrm{U}(m-1, m-1)$ whose Harish-Chandra parameter $\lambda_{0}$ is given by

$$
\lambda_{0}=\left(\alpha_{3}, \alpha_{5}, \ldots, \alpha_{n-1} ; \alpha_{4}, \alpha_{6}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right)
$$

and $\chi$ be the character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$defined by

$$
\chi\left(a e^{\theta \sqrt{-1}}\right)=a^{\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}} e^{\left(\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}\right) \theta \sqrt{-1}}
$$

for $a>0$ and $\theta \in \mathbb{R} / 2 \pi \mathbb{Z}$. Consider the normalized induced representation $I\left(\pi_{0}\right)=\operatorname{Ind}_{P}^{G}\left(\chi \boxtimes \pi_{0}\right)$. We denote the Harish-Chandra characters of $\pi$ and $\operatorname{Ind}_{P}^{G}\left(\chi \boxtimes \pi_{0}\right)$ by

$$
\Theta_{\lambda} \quad \text { and } \quad \Theta_{I\left(\pi_{0}\right)}
$$

respectively. Now we use Schmid's character identity ([Sc1, (9.4) Theorem], [Sc2, Theorem (b)]). This focuses on representations of semisimple groups, but since $\mathrm{U}(m, m)$ is generated by its center and a semisimple group $\mathrm{SU}(m, m)$, we can apply Schmid's character identity to $\pi$. It asserts that

$$
\Theta_{\lambda}+\Theta_{\lambda}^{\prime}=\Theta_{I\left(\pi_{0}\right)}
$$

where $\mathbb{Z}^{2 m} \ni \mu \mapsto \Theta_{\mu}^{\prime}$ is the coherent continuation of Harish-Chandra characters satisfying that:

- $\Theta_{\mu}^{\prime}$ is a virtual character corresponding to the infinitesimal character $\mu$ via the Harish-Chandra map;
- if $\mu=\left(\mu_{1}, \ldots, \mu_{m} ; \mu_{m+1}, \ldots, \mu_{2 m}\right) \in \mathbb{Z}^{2 m}$ satisfies that

$$
\mu_{m+1}>\mu_{1}>\mu_{2}, \quad \text { and } \quad \mu_{2}>\mu_{m+2}>\mu_{3}>\mu_{m+3}>\cdots>\mu_{m}>\mu_{2 m}
$$

then $\Theta_{\mu}^{\prime}$ is the character of the discrete series representation whose Harish-Chandra parameter is $\mu$.

By the theory of the wall-crossing of coherent families (see e.g., [V2, Corollary 7.3.9]), we see that $\Theta_{\lambda}^{\prime}$ is the character of a representation of $G$. This implies that $\pi$ is a subquotient of $I\left(\pi_{0}\right)$. By the additivity of Whittaker model (see e.g., [M1, §3]) and Hashizume's result ([Ha, Theorem 1], [M2, Theorem 3.4.1]), we see that if $\pi$ is $\mathfrak{w}_{\epsilon}$-generic, then so is $\pi_{0}$. By the induction hypothesis, we must have $\epsilon=+1$, as desired.
A.4. Explicit description of discrete $L$-packets. In this subsection, we recall the definition of $J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}$in Theorem A. 2 when $\phi \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right.$ ) (see e.g., $[\mathrm{Ka}, \S 5.6]$ ), and explain Theorem 2.1 (4).

We regard $G=\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ as an algebraic group defined over $\mathbb{R}$. Namely, $G(\mathbb{C})=\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ with $n=p+q$, and the complex conjugate $c$ acts on $G(\mathbb{C})$ by

$$
c(g)=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & \\
& -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right)^{t} \bar{g}^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & \\
& -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right)^{-1}, \quad g \in G(\mathbb{C})
$$

where $g \mapsto \bar{g}$ is the usual action of the complex conjugate on $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$. We set $G^{*}=\mathrm{U}(m, m)$ and $\left(p_{0}, q_{0}\right)=$ $(m, m)$ if $p+q=2 m$, and $G^{*}=\mathrm{U}(m+1, m)$ and $\left(p_{0}, q_{0}\right)=(m+1, m)$ if $p+q=2 m+1$. We choose an isomorphism $\psi_{p, q}: G^{*}(\mathbb{C}) \rightarrow G(\mathbb{C})$ over $\mathbb{C}$ and a 1 -cocycle $z_{p, q} \in Z^{1}\left(\mathbb{R}, G^{*}\right)$ by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
\psi_{p, q}=\operatorname{Int}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & & \\
& \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{p_{0}-p} & \\
& & \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right), \quad z_{p, q}(c)=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & & \\
& -\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}-p} & \\
& & \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right) \quad \text { if } p \leq p_{0} \\
\psi_{p, q}=\operatorname{Int}\left(\begin{array}{lll}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & & \\
& \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}-q} & \\
& & \mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right), \quad z_{p, q}(c)=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & & \\
& -\mathbf{1}_{q_{0}-q} & \\
& & \mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right) \quad \text { if } q \leq q_{0}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Here, we regard $c$ as the non-trivial element in $\operatorname{Gal}(\mathbb{C} / \mathbb{R})$. Then we have

$$
\psi_{p, q}^{-1} \cdot c\left(\psi_{p, q}\right)=\operatorname{Int}\left(z_{p, q}(c)\right)
$$

Hence $\left(G, \psi_{p, q}, z_{p, q}\right)$ is a pure inner twist of $G^{*}$. In particular, $G^{*}$ is a quasi-split pure inner form of $G$.
Let $\phi=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}} \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ with $n=p+q$. We can realize $\phi$ as

$$
\phi\left(a e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
e^{2 \alpha_{1} \sqrt{-1} \theta} & & \\
& \ddots & \\
& & e^{2 \alpha_{n} \sqrt{-1} \theta}
\end{array}\right)
$$

for $a \in \mathbb{R}_{>0}$ and $\theta \in \mathbb{R} / 2 \pi \mathbb{Z}$. Note that if $\phi=\varphi \mid W_{\mathbb{C}}$ for an admissible homomorphism $\varphi: W_{\mathbb{R}} \rightarrow{ }^{L} U_{n}$, then $\varphi(j)$ acts on $\phi\left(a e^{\sqrt{-1} \theta}\right)$ by the inverse.

We denote the canonical right action of $S_{n}$ on $\left(\mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n}$ by

$$
\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n}\right)^{\sigma}=\left(t_{\sigma(1)}, \ldots, t_{\sigma(n)}\right)
$$

for $\sigma \in S_{n}$ and $\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n}\right) \in\left(\mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n}$. For $\sigma \in S_{n}$, we define an embedding

$$
\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma}:\left(\mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n} \hookrightarrow G=\mathrm{U}(p, q)
$$

by

$$
\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma}\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
t_{\sigma(1)} & & & & & \\
& \ddots & & & & \\
& & t_{\sigma(p)} & & & \\
& & & t_{\sigma(p+1)} & & \\
& & & & \ddots & \\
& & & & & t_{\sigma(n)}
\end{array}\right) \in G=\mathrm{U}(p, q)
$$

for $t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n} \in \mathbb{C}^{1}$. We call $\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma}$ an admissible embedding of $\left(\mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n}$ (see [Ka, §5.6]). The image of $\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma}$ is independent of $\sigma$, and is denoted by $T_{p, q}$. Note that $\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma}$ and $\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma^{\prime}}$ are $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$-conjugate if and only if

$$
\sigma^{-1} \sigma^{\prime} \in S_{p} \times S_{q}
$$

HIRAKU ATOBE

Hence when we consider the $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$-conjugacy class of $\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma}$, we may assume that

$$
\sigma(1)<\cdots<\sigma(p), \quad \sigma(p+1)<\cdots<\sigma(n)
$$

For such $\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma}$, we denote by $\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}$ the irreducible discrete series representation of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with Harish-Chandra parameter

$$
\lambda^{\sigma}=\left(\alpha_{\sigma(1)}, \ldots, \alpha_{\sigma(p)} ; \alpha_{\sigma(p+1)}, \ldots, \alpha_{\sigma(n)}\right)
$$

Let $\Theta_{\pi_{,, q}^{\sigma}}$ be the Harish-Chandra character of $\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}$, which is a real analytic function on the regular set $\mathrm{U}(p, q)^{\text {reg }}$ of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. We put $K_{p, q}=\mathrm{U}(p) \times \mathrm{U}(q)$ to be the usual maximal compact subgroup of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, which contains $T_{p, q}$ as a maximal torus. On $T_{p, q, \text { reg }}:=\mathrm{U}(p, q)^{\text {reg }} \cap T_{p, q}$, we have

$$
\Theta_{\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}}(t)=(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim}\left(\mathrm{U}(p, q) / K_{p, q}\right)} \frac{\sum_{w \in W_{K_{p, q}}} \operatorname{sgn}(w) t^{w\left(\lambda^{\sigma}\right)}}{\prod_{\alpha \in \Delta_{\lambda \sigma}^{+}}\left(t^{\alpha / 2}-t^{-\alpha / 2}\right)},
$$

where $\Delta_{\lambda^{\sigma}}^{+}$is the unique positive system of $\Delta\left(\mathrm{U}(p, q), T_{p, q}\right)$ such that $\left\langle\lambda^{\sigma}, \alpha^{\vee}\right\rangle>0$ for any $\alpha \in \Delta_{\lambda^{\sigma}}^{+}$. Note that $\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathrm{U}(p, q) / K_{p, q}\right)=2 p q$ so that $(-1)^{\frac{1}{2} \operatorname{dim}\left(\mathrm{U}(p, q) / K_{p, q}\right)}=(-1)^{p q}$. We put

$$
\Pi_{\phi}^{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}=\left\{\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma} \mid \sigma \in S_{n} /\left(S_{p} \times S_{q}\right)\right\} \subset \operatorname{Irr}_{\mathrm{disc}}(\mathrm{U}(p, q))
$$

Then the $L$-packet $\Pi_{\phi}$ associated to $\phi$ is defined by

$$
\Pi_{\phi}=\bigsqcup_{p+q=n} \Pi_{\phi}^{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}
$$

Recall that

$$
A_{\phi}=(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}) e_{2 \alpha_{n}}
$$

Let $\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma} \in \Pi_{\phi}^{\mathrm{U}(p, q)}$ with $\sigma \in S_{n}$ satisfying $\sigma(1)<\cdots<\sigma(p)$ and $\sigma(p+1)<\cdots<\sigma(n)$. We define $g_{p, q}^{\sigma} \in G^{*}(\mathbb{C})=\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ as follows. There is an element $h_{p, q}^{\sigma} \in G_{0}(\mathbb{R})$ with $G_{0}:=\mathrm{U}(n, 0)$ such that $\operatorname{Int}\left(h_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)$ is equal to

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
t_{1} & & \\
& \ddots & \\
& & t_{n}
\end{array}\right) \mapsto\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
t_{\sigma_{+}^{-1} \sigma(1)} & & \\
& \ddots & \\
& & t_{\sigma_{+}^{-1} \sigma(n)}
\end{array}\right)
$$

on $T_{n, 0}$. Here, $\sigma_{+} \in S_{n}$ is defined by

$$
\sigma_{+}(i)= \begin{cases}2 i-1 & \text { if } i \leq p_{0} \\ 2\left(i-p_{0}\right) & \text { if } i>p_{0}\end{cases}
$$

so that

$$
\left(\alpha_{\sigma_{+}(1)}, \ldots, \alpha_{\sigma_{+}\left(p_{0}\right)} ; \alpha_{\sigma_{+}\left(p_{0}+1\right)}, \ldots, \alpha_{\sigma_{+}(n)}\right)=\left(\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{3}, \ldots ; \alpha_{2}, \alpha_{4}, \ldots\right)
$$

We put

$$
g_{p, q}^{\sigma}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right)^{-1} h_{p, q}^{\sigma}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right) \in \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})=G^{*}(\mathbb{C})
$$

Then we have

$$
\eta_{p, q}^{\sigma}=\psi_{p, q} \circ \operatorname{Int}\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right) \circ \eta_{p_{0}, q_{0}}^{\sigma_{+}}
$$

that is, $\eta_{p, q}$ is the composition

$$
\left(\mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n} \xrightarrow{\eta_{p_{0}, q_{0}}^{\sigma+}} G^{*}(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\psi_{n, 0}} G_{0}(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\operatorname{Int}\left(h_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)} G_{0}(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\psi_{n, 0}^{-1}} G^{*}(\mathbb{C}) \xrightarrow{\psi_{p, q}} G(\mathbb{C})
$$

We set $\operatorname{inv}\left(\pi_{p_{0}, q_{0}}^{\sigma_{+}}, \pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right) \in H^{1}\left(\mathbb{R}, T_{p_{0}, q_{0}}\right)$ to be the class of

$$
c \mapsto\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)^{-1} \cdot z_{p, q}(c) \cdot c\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right),
$$

where $c\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)$ is the action of $c$ on $g_{p, q}^{\sigma}$ in $G^{*}(\mathbb{C})$ so that

$$
\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & \\
& -\sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right)\left(h_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & \\
& \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

$$
c\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & \\
& \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right) h_{p, q}^{\sigma}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & \\
& -\sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

We can compute $\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)^{-1} \cdot z_{p, q}(c) \cdot c\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)$ explicitly. First, we have

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right) z_{p, q}(c)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p_{0}} & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{-1} \mathbf{1}_{q_{0}}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\mathbf{1}_{p} & 0 \\
0 & -\mathbf{1}_{q}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

For $i=1, \ldots, n$, we define $\epsilon_{i} \in\{ \pm 1\}$ by

$$
\epsilon_{i}= \begin{cases}+1 & \text { if } i \leq p \\ -1 & \text { if } i>p\end{cases}
$$

Then $\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)^{-1} \cdot z_{p, q}(c) \cdot c\left(g_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)$ is equal to

$$
\left(\begin{array}{llllll}
\epsilon_{\sigma^{-1} \sigma_{+}(1)} & & & & & \\
& \ddots & & & & \\
& & \epsilon_{\sigma^{-1} \sigma_{+}\left(p_{0}\right)} & & \\
& & & & \epsilon_{\sigma^{-1} \sigma_{+}\left(p_{0}+1\right)} & \\
\\
& & & & \ddots & \\
& & & & -\epsilon_{\sigma^{-1} \sigma_{+}(n)}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Note that $H^{1}\left(\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{C}^{1}\right) \cong\{ \pm 1\}$. The map $\eta_{p_{0}, q_{0}}^{\sigma_{+}}:\left(\mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n} \rightarrow T_{p_{0}, q_{0}}$ gives an isomorphism

$$
\left(\eta_{p_{0}, q_{0}}^{\sigma_{+}}\right)^{*}: H^{1}\left(\mathbb{R},\left(\mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n}\right) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(\mathbb{R}, T_{p_{0}, q_{0}}\right)
$$

For each $e_{2 \alpha_{i}} \in A_{\phi}$, we denote by $\left\langle e_{2 \alpha_{i}}, \cdot\right\rangle$ the $i$-th projection

$$
H^{1}\left(\mathbb{R},\left(\mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n}\right) \cong H^{1}\left(\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{C}^{1}\right)^{n} \cong\{ \pm 1\}^{n} \rightarrow\{ \pm 1\}
$$

Then $J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}\left(\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right) \in\{ \pm 1\}$ is defined by

$$
J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}\left(\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)=\left\langle e_{2 \alpha_{i}},\left(\eta_{p_{0}, q_{0}}^{\sigma_{+}}\right)^{*-1}\left(\operatorname{inv}\left(\pi_{p_{0}, q_{0}}^{\sigma_{+}}, \pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)\right)\right\rangle .
$$

Hence

$$
J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}\left(\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)\left(e_{2 \alpha_{\sigma_{+}(i)}}\right)= \begin{cases}\epsilon_{\sigma^{-1} \sigma_{+}(i)} & \text { if } i \leq p_{0} \\ -\epsilon_{\sigma^{-1} \sigma_{+}(i)} & \text { if } i>p_{0}\end{cases}
$$

If we put $j=\sigma_{+}(i)$, we see that $1 \leq i \leq p_{0}$ if and only if $j$ is odd. Therefore, we conclude that

$$
J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}\left(\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)\left(e_{2 \alpha_{j}}\right)= \begin{cases}(-1)^{j-1} & \text { if } \sigma^{-1}(j) \leq p \\ (-1)^{j} & \text { if } \sigma^{-1}(j)>p\end{cases}
$$

The other bijection $J_{\mathfrak{w}_{-}}: \Pi_{\phi} \rightarrow \widehat{A_{\phi}}$ is defined by using $\sigma_{-} \in S_{n}$ such that

$$
\left(\alpha_{\sigma_{-}(1)}, \ldots, \alpha_{\sigma_{-}\left(p_{0}\right)} ; \alpha_{\sigma_{-}\left(p_{0}+1\right)}, \ldots, \alpha_{\sigma_{-}(n)}\right)=\left(\alpha_{2}, \alpha_{4}, \ldots ; \alpha_{1}, \alpha_{3}, \ldots\right)
$$

in place of $\sigma_{+}$. By a similar calculation, we have

$$
J_{\mathfrak{w}_{-}}\left(\pi_{p, q}^{\sigma}\right)\left(e_{2 \alpha_{j}}\right)= \begin{cases}(-1)^{j} & \text { if } \sigma^{-1}(j) \leq p \\ (-1)^{j-1} & \text { if } \sigma^{-1}(j)>p\end{cases}
$$

In particular, the isomorphism $J_{\mathfrak{w}_{-}} \circ\left(J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}\right)^{-1}: \widehat{A_{\phi}} \rightarrow \widehat{A_{\phi}}$ is given by

$$
J_{\mathfrak{w}_{-}} \circ\left(J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}\right)^{-1}=\cdot \otimes \eta_{-1}
$$

where the character $\eta_{-1}: A_{\phi} \rightarrow\{ \pm 1\}$ is defined by

$$
\eta_{-1}\left(e_{2 \alpha_{j}}\right)=-1
$$

for any $1 \leq j \leq n$.
Hence we have the following theorem.

Theorem A.4. Let

$$
\phi=\chi_{2 \alpha_{1}} \oplus \cdots \oplus \chi_{2 \alpha_{n}} \in \Phi_{\text {disc }}\left(\mathrm{U}_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)
$$

with $2 \alpha_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$ satisfying $\alpha_{1}>\cdots>\alpha_{n}$ and $2 \alpha_{i} \equiv n-1 \bmod 2$. Then the L-packet $\Pi_{\phi}$ consists of all irreducible discrete series representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ with $p+q=n$ whose infinitesimal characters are equal to $\left(\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{n}\right)$. Moreover, for each Whittaker datum $\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}$of $\mathrm{U}\left(p_{0}, q_{0}\right)$ with $\left|p_{0}-q_{0}\right| \leq 1$, there is a bijection

$$
J_{\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}}: \Pi_{\phi} \rightarrow \widehat{A_{\phi}}
$$

such that the Harish-Chandra parameter of $\pi^{ \pm}(\phi, \eta):=\left(J_{\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}}\right)^{-1}(\eta)$ is given by $\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p} ; \lambda_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \lambda_{q}^{\prime}\right)$, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\{\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{p}\right\}=\left\{\alpha_{i} \mid \eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)= \pm(-1)^{i-1}\right\} \\
& \left\{\lambda_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \lambda_{q}^{\prime}\right\}=\left\{\alpha_{i} \mid \eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)= \pm(-1)^{i}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

In particular, if we put $p=\#\left\{i \mid \eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)= \pm(-1)^{i-1}\right\}$ and $q=\#\left\{i \mid \eta\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)= \pm(-1)^{i}\right\}$, then $\pi^{ \pm}(\phi, \eta)$ is a representation of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$. There is a unique $\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}$-generic representation in $\Pi_{\phi}$ which corresponds to the trivial character of $A_{\phi}$ via $J_{\mathfrak{w}_{ \pm}}$. The bijections $J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}$and $J_{\mathfrak{w}_{-}}$are related by

$$
J_{\mathfrak{w}_{-}}(\pi)=J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}(\pi) \otimes \eta_{-1}
$$

for any $\pi \in \Pi_{\phi}$, where $\eta_{-1} \in \widehat{A_{\phi}}$ is defined by $\eta_{-1}\left(e_{2 \alpha_{i}}\right)=-1$ for any $e_{2 \alpha_{i}} \in A_{\phi}$.
In this paper, we always use $J=J_{\mathfrak{w}_{+}}$. By this theorem, we obtain Theorem 2.1 (4).

## References

[A] J. Adams, The theta correspondence over $\mathbb{R}$, Harmonic analysis, group representations, automorphic forms and invariant theory, 1-39, Lect. Notes Ser. Inst. Math. Sci. Natl. Univ. Singap., 12, World Sci. Publ., Hackensack, NJ, 2007.
[AB1] J. Adams and D. Barbasch, Reductive dual pair correspondence for complex groups, J. Funct. Anal. 132 (1995), no. 1, 1-42.
[AB2] J. Adams and D. Barbasch, Genuine representations of the metaplectic group, Compositio Math. 113 (1998), no. 1, 23-66.
[AG] H. Atobe and W. T. Gan, Local theta correspondence of tempered representations and Langlands parameters, Invent. Math. 210 (2017), no. 2, 341-415.
[BS] Y. Bao and B. Sun, Coincidence of algebraic and smooth theta correspondences, Represent. Theory 21 (2017), 458-466.
[BP] R. Beuzart-Plessis, A local trace formula for the Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture for unitary groups: the archimedean case, arXiv:1506.01452v3.
[GGP1] W. T. Gan, B. H. Gross and D. Prasad, Symplectic local root numbers, central critical L-values, and restriction problems in the representation theory of classical groups, Astérisque No. 346 (2012), 1-109.
[GGP2] W. T. Gan, B. H. Gross and D. Prasad, Restrictions of representations of classical groups: examples, Sur les conjectures de Gross et Prasad. I. Astérisque No. 346 (2012), 111-170.
[GI] W. T. Gan and A. Ichino, The Gross-Prasad conjecture and local theta correspondence, Invent. Math. 206 (2016), no. 3, 705-799.
[GQT] W. T. Gan, Y. Qiu and S. Takeda, The regularized Siegel-Weil formula (the second term identity) and the Rallis inner product formula, Invent. Math. 198 (2014), no. 3, 739-831.
[GT1] W. T. Gan and S. Takeda, On the Howe duality conjecture in classical theta correspondence, Advances in the theory of automorphic forms and their L-functions, 105-117, Contemp. Math., 664, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 2016.
[GT2] W. T. Gan, and S. Takeda, A proof of the Howe duality conjecture, J. Amer. Math. Soc. 29 (2016), no. 2, $473-493$.
[HKS] M. Harris, S. S. Kudla and W. J. Sweet, Theta dichotomy for unitary groups, J. Amer. Math. Soc. 9 (1996), no. 4, 941-1004.
[Ha] M. Hashizume, Whittaker models for real reductive groups, Japan. J. Math. (N.S.) 5 (1979), no. 2, $349-401$.
[He1] H. He, Nonvanishing of a certain sesquilinear form in the theta correspondence, Represent. Theory 5 (2001), 437-454.
[He2] H. He, On the Gan-Gross-Prasad conjecture for $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$, Invent. Math. 209 (2017), no. 3, 837-884.
[Ho] R. Howe, Transcending classical invariant theory, J. Amer. Math. Soc. 2 (1989), no. 3, 535-552.
[Ka] T. Kaletha, Rigid inner forms of real and p-adic groups, Ann. of Math. (2) 184 (2016), no. 2, 559-632.
[KMSW] T. Kaletha, A. Mínguez, S. W. Shin, and P.-J. White, Endoscopic classification of representations: inner forms of unitary groups, arXiv:1409.3731v3.
[KV] M. Kashiwara and M. Vergne, On the Segal-Shale-Weil representations and harmonic polynomials, Invent. Math. 44 (1978), no. 1, 1-47.
[Ku1] S. S. Kudla, On the local theta correspondence, Invent. Math. 83 (1986), 229-255.
[Ku2]
S. S. Kudla, Splitting metaplectic covers of dual reductive pairs, Israel J. Math. 87 (1994), no. 1-3, 361-401.
[KR]
[L] R. P. Langlands, On the classification of irreducible representations of real algebraic groups, Representation theory and harmonic analysis on semisimple Lie groups, 101-170, Math. Surveys Monogr., 31, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 1989.
[Li] J.-S. Li, Theta lifting for unitary representations with nonzero cohomology, Duke Math. J. 61 (1990), no. 3, $913-937$.
[LPTZ] J.-S. Li, A. Paul, E.-C. Tan and C.-B. Zhu, The explicit duality correspondence of $\left(\operatorname{Sp}(p, q), \mathrm{O}^{*}(2 n)\right)$, J. Funct. Anal. 200 (2003), no. 1, 71-100.
[M1]
[M2] H. Matumoto, $C^{-\infty}$ - Whittaker vectors corresponding to a principal nilpotent orbit of a real reductive linear Lie group, and wave front sets, Compositio Math. 82 (1992), no. 2, 189-244.
[Mœ1] C. Mœglin, Correspondance de Howe pour les paires reductives duales: quelques calculs dans le cas archimédien, J. Funct. Anal. 85 (1989), no. 1, 1-85.
[Mœ2] C. Mœglin, Conjecture d'Adams pour la correspondance de Howe et filtration de Kudla, Arithmetic geometry and automorphic forms, 445-503, Adv. Lect. Math. (ALM), 19, Int. Press, Somerville, MA, 2011.
[Mœ3] C. Mœglin, Paquets d'Arthur spéciaux unipotents aux places archimédiennes et correspondance de Howe, Representation theory, number theory, and invariant theory, 469-502, Progr. Math., 323, Birkhäuser/Springer, Cham, 2017.
[Mo] C. P. Mok, Endoscopic classification of representations of quasi-split unitary groups, Mem. Amer. Math. Soc. $\mathbf{2 3 5}$ (2015), no. 1108.
A. Paul, Howe correspondence for real unitary groups, J. Funct. Anal. 159 (1998), no. 2, 384-431.
[P2]
A. Paul, First occurrence for the dual pairs $(\mathrm{U}(p, q), \mathrm{U}(r, s))$, Canad. J. Math. 51 (1999), no. 3, 636-657.
[P3]
A. Paul, Howe correspondence for real unitary groups. II, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. 128 (2000), no. 10, 3129-3136.
[P4]
[PT] A. Paul and P. E. Trapa, One-dimensional representations of $\mathrm{U}(p, q)$ and the Howe correspondence, J. Funct. Anal. 195 (2002), no. 1, 129-166.
[Pr] D. Prasad, On the local Howe duality correspondence, Internat. Math. Res. Notices (1993), 279-287.
[R] S. Rallis, On the Howe duality conjecture, Compositio Math. 51 (1984), no. 3, 333-399.
[Ra] R. Rao, On some explicit formulas in the theory of Weil representation, Pacific J. Math. 157 (1993) 335-371.
[Sc1] W. Schmid, On the characters of the discrete series. The Hermitian symmetric case, Invent. Math. 30 (1975), no. 1, 47-144.
[Sc2] W. Schmid, Two character identities for semisimple Lie groups, Non-commutative harmonic analysis (Actes Colloq., Marseille-Luminy, 1976), pp. 196-225. Lecture Notes in Math., Vol. 587, Springer, Berlin, 1977.
[S1] D. Shelstad, Tempered endoscopy for real groups. I. Geometric transfer with canonical factors, Representation theory of real reductive Lie groups, 215-246, Contemp. Math., 472, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 2008.
[S2] D. Shelstad, Tempered endoscopy for real groups. II. Spectral transfer factors, Automorphic forms and the Langlands program, 236-276, Adv. Lect. Math. (ALM), 9, Int. Press, Somerville, MA, 2010.
[S3] D. Shelstad, Tempered endoscopy for real groups. III. Inversion of transfer and L-packet structure, Represent. Theory 12 (2008), 369-402.
[SZ1] B. Sun and C.-B. Zhu, Multiplicity one theorems: the Archimedean case, Ann. of Math. (2) 175 (2012), no. 1, 23-44.
B. Sun and C.-B. Zhu, Conservation relations for local theta correspondence, J. Amer. Math. Soc. 28 (2015), no. 4, 939-983.
[T] J. Tate, Number theoretic background, Automorphic forms, representations and L-functions. Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., Oregon State Univ., Corvallis, Ore., 1979, Part 2, pp. 3-26.
[V1] D. A. Vogan, Jr, Gel'fand-Kirillov dimension for Harish-Chandra modules, Invent. Math., 48 (1978), no. 1, 75-98.
[V2] D. A. Vogan, Jr, Representations of real reductive Lie groups, Progress in Mathematics, 15. Birkhäuser, Boston, Mass., 1981.
[V3] D. A. Vogan, Jr, The local Langlands conjecture, Representation theory of groups and algebras, 305-379, Contemp. Math., 145, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 1993.
[W] J.-L. Waldspurger, Demonstration d'une conjecture de dualite de Howe dans le cas p-adique, $p \neq 2$, in Festschrift in honor of I. I. Piatetski-Shapiro on the occasion of his sixtieth birthday, part I (Ramat Aviv, 1989), Israel Mathematical Conference Proceedings, vol. 2 (Weizmann, Jerusalem, 1990), 267-324.
[Y] S. Yamana, L-functions and theta correspondence for classical groups, Invent. Math. 196 (2014), no. 3, 651-732.
[Z] C.-B. Zhu, Local theta correspondence and nilpotent invariants, Representations of reductive groups, 427-450, Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., 101, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 2019.

Department of Mathematics, Hokkaido University, Kita 10, Nishi 8, Kita-Ku, Sapporo, Hokkaido, 060-0810, Japan
Email address: atobe@math.sci.hokudai.ac.jp

